République Algérienne Démocratique et Populaire<br>Ministère de l'Enseignement Supérieur et de la Recherche Scientifique Université Djillali LIABES - SIDI BEL-ABBES -

## THĖSE

Préparée au Département de Mathématiques de la Faculté des Sciences Exactes

## par <br> Zohra BOUTEFFAL

Pour obtenir<br>le grade de DOCTEUR

Spécialité : Mathématiques
Option: Systèmes dynamiques et applications

# Problème de Darboux pour des équations différentielles hyperboliques avec impulsions d'ordre fractionnaire 

Thèse présentée et soutenue publiquement le 19/02/2015, devant le Jury composé de

| Abdelghani OUAHAB | Pr | U.Sidi Bel-Abbes | Président |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| Mouffak BENCHOHRA | Pr | U. Sidi Bel-Abbes | Promoteur |
| Mohamed BELMEKKI | $\operatorname{Pr}$ | U.Saida | Examinateur |
| Said ABBAS | $\operatorname{Pr}$ | U.Saida | Examinateur |
| Naima HAMIDI | $\operatorname{Pr}$ | U.Sidi Bel-Abbes | Examinateur |

## Acknowledgements

## In the name of Allah, Most Gracious, Most Merciful.

Praise be to Allah who gave me strength, inspiration and prudence to bring this thesis to a close. Peace be upon His messenger Muhammad and his honorable family.

First and foremost, I would like to express my sincere gratitude to my supervisor Prof. Mouffak BENCHOHRA for the continuous support of my study and research, for his patience, motivation, enthusiasm, and immense knowledge. His guidance helped me in all the time of research and writing of this thesis.

Besides my advisor, I owe my thanks to Prof.——, who accepted to chair this thesis committee. This crucial contribution, made him a backbone of this thesis.

My special thank belongs to Prof. —— , Prof. - , Prof. - , and Prof. -- who in the midst of all their activity, accepted to be members of this thesis committee.

I am also indebted to my beloved parents and my brother. A big thank may not enough for their encouragement, understanding, tolerance and prayers that acts as a giant support for my success. My thanks also go to all my friends and colleagues, wherever they may be, thank you.

This thesis is especially dedicated to my familly.

## Publications

1. M. Benchohra and Z. Boutefal, Impulsive Differential Equations of Fractional Order with Infinit Delay, Journal of Fractional Calculus and Applications 5 (5) (2013), 1-15.
2. M. Benchohra and Z. Boutefal, Impulsive Hyperbolic System of Partial Differential Equations of Fractional Order with Delay, Commentationes Mathematica.
3. M. Benchohra, Z. Boutefal, Impulsive Partial Hyperbolic Differential Equations of Fractional Order with State Dependent Delay (submitted).
4. M. Benchohra and Z. Boutefal, Global Uniqueness Results for Impulsive Fractional Partial Hyperbolic Differential Equations with Delay (submitted).

## Contents

Introduction ..... 3
1 Preliminaries ..... 9
1.1 Some Notations and definitions ..... 9
1.2 Some properties of Partial Fractional Calculs ..... 10
1.3 Phase spaces ..... 11
1.4 Some properties in Fréchet spaces ..... 12
1.5 Some fixed point theorems ..... 13
2 Impulsive Partial Hyperbolic Differential Equations of Fractional Order ..... 15
2.1 Introduction ..... 15
2.2 Existence of Solutions ..... 16
2.3 Nonlocal impulsive partial differential equations ..... 25
2.4 An Example ..... 25
3 Impulsive Partial Hyperbolic Functional Differential Equations of Frac- tional Order with Delay ..... 27
3.1 Introduction ..... 27
3.2 Impulsive Partial Differential Equations with Finite Delay ..... 27
3.2.1 Introduction ..... 27
3.2.2 Existence Results ..... 28
3.2.3 An Example ..... 34
3.3 Impulsive Partial Differential Equations with Infinite Delay ..... 35
3.3.1 Introduction ..... 35
3.3.2 Existence Results ..... 35
3.3.3 An Example ..... 45
4 Impulsive Partial Hyperbolic Functional Differential Equations of Frac- tional Order with State Dependent Delay ..... 47
4.1 Introduction ..... 47
4.2 Impulsive Partial Differential Equations with Finite Delay ..... 47
4.2.1 Introduction ..... 47
4.2.2 Existence Results ..... 48
4.2.3 An Example ..... 55
4.3 Impulsive Partial Differential Equations with Infinite Delay ..... 56
4.3.1 Introduction ..... 56
4.3.2 Existence Results ..... 56
4.3.3 An Example ..... 65
5 Global Uniqueness Results for Impulsive Partial Hyperbolic Functional Differential Equations of Fractional Order ..... 67
5.1 Introduction ..... 67
5.2 Existence Results for the Finite Delay Case ..... 67
5.2.1 Introduction ..... 67
5.2.2 Main Results ..... 68
5.2.3 An Example ..... 72
5.3 Existence Results for the Infinite Delay Case ..... 73
5.3.1 Introduction ..... 73
5.3.2 Main Results ..... 74
5.3.3 An Example ..... 79

## Introduction

The idea of fractional calculus and fractional order differential equations has been a subject of interest not only among mathematicians, but also among physicists and engineers. During the last decade, it was found to play a fundamental role in the modeling of a considerable number of phenomena, in particular, the modeling of memory dependent phenomena and complex media such as porous media. Fractional calculus emerged as an important and efficient tool for the study of dynamical systems where classical methods reveal strong limitations.

Fractional order models are found to be more adequate than integer order models in some real world problems. In fact, fractional derivatives provide an excellent tool for the description of memory and hereditary properties of various materials and processes; see the books by Baleanu et al. [13], Hilfer [40], Tarasov [53], and the references therein. Recent developments on fractional differential equations from theoretical point of view are given in the books by Abbas et al. [7], and Lakshmikantham et al. [45].

The theory of impulsive integer order differential equations and inclusions has become important in some mathematical models of real processes and phenomena studied in physics, chemical technology, population dynamics, biotechnology, and economics. At present the foundations of the general theory are already laid, and many of them are investigated in detail the papers of Abbas and Benchohra [3, 4], Agarwal et al. [5],Lakshmikantham et al[44], Samoilenko and Peresyuk [51], and the references therein. There was an intensive development of the impulse theory, especially in the area of impulsive differential equations and inclusions with fixed moments.

This thesis is devoted to the existence and uniqueness of solutions for various classes of Darboux problem for hyperbolic differential equations involving the Caputo fractional derivative, the best fractional derivative of the time. Some equations present delay which may be finite, infinite, or state-dependent. The tools used include classical fixed point theorems in Banach and Fréchet spaces. Each chapter concludes with a section devoted to notes and all abstract results are illustrated by examples.

In the following we give an outline of our thesis organization, Consists of six chapters defining the work contributed. The first chapter gives some notations, definitions, lemmas and fixed point theorems which are used throughout this thesis. In Sect. 1.1, we give some notations from the theory of Banach spaces. Section 1.2 is concerned to recall some basic definitions and facts on partial fractional calculus theory. In Sect. 1.3, we give
definition and examples of phase space. In Sect. 1.4, we give some properties in Fréchet space. Section. 1.5, is devoted to fixed-points theory, here we give the main theorems that will be used in the following chapters.

In Chapter 2, we study a system of impulsive partial hyperbolic differential equation. Our results are based on fixed point theorem due to Burton and Kirk for the sum of contraction and completely continuous operators. The first result is for impulsive partial hyperbolic differential equation of the form

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=f(t, x, u(t, x)), \text { if }(t, x) \in J_{k}, k=0, \ldots, m,  \tag{1}\\
u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \text { if } x \in[0, b] ; k=1, \ldots, m,  \tag{2}\\
u(t, 0)=\varphi(t), u(0, x)=\psi(x), t \in[0, a], x \in[0, b], \tag{3}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $J_{0}=\left[0, t_{1}\right] \times[0, b], J_{k}:=\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b], k=1, \ldots, m, z_{k}=\left(t_{k}, 0\right), k=$ $0, \ldots, m, J=[0, a] \times[0, b], a, b>0,{ }^{c} D_{0}^{r}$ is the Caputo fractional derivative of order $r=\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right) \in(0,1] \times(0,1], 0=t_{0}<t_{1}<\cdots<t_{m}<t_{m+1}=a, f: J \times \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, $I_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, k=0,1, \ldots, m$ are given functions, $\varphi:[0, a] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ and $\psi:[0, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ are given absolutely continuous functions with $\varphi(0)=\psi(0)$.

In Sect. 2.3, we give similar result to the following nonlocal initial value problem

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=f(t, x, u(t, x)), \text { if }(t, x) \in J_{k}, k=0, \ldots, m,  \tag{4}\\
u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \text { if } x \in[0, b] ; k=1, \ldots, m,  \tag{5}\\
u(t, 0)+Q(u)=\varphi(t), u(0, x)+K(u)=\psi(x), t \in[0, a], x \in[0, b], \tag{6}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $f, \varphi, \psi, I_{k} ; k=1, \ldots, m$, are as in problem (2.1)-(2.3) and $Q, K: P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right) \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ are continuous functions. $P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ is a Banach space to be specified in section 2.2 of Chapter 2.
An example will be presented in the last illustrating the abstract theory.
In Chapter 3, we shall be concerned by functional differential equations.
In Sect. 3.2, we investigate the existence of solutions for impulsive partial hyperbolic functional differential equations of fractional order with finite delay of the form

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=f\left(t, x, u_{(t, x)}\right) ; \quad \text { if }(t, x) \in J_{k}, \quad k=0, \ldots, m,  \tag{7}\\
u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \quad \text { if } x \in[0, b], k=1, \ldots, m,  \tag{8}\\
u(t, x)=\phi(t, x) ; \text { if }(t, x) \in \tilde{J},  \tag{9}\\
u(t, 0)=\varphi(t), t \in[0, a], u(0, x)=\psi(x) ; x \in[0, b], \tag{10}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $J_{0}=\left[0, t_{1}\right] \times[0, b], \quad J_{k}:=\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b], k=1, \ldots, m, z_{k}=\left(t_{k}, 0\right), k=$ $0, \ldots, m, a, b, \alpha, \beta>0, J=[0, a] \times[0, b], \tilde{J}=[-\alpha, a] \times[-\beta, b] \backslash(0, a] \times(0, b],{ }^{c} D_{0}^{r}$ is the Caputo fractional derivative of order $r=\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right) \in(0,1] \times(0,1], \varphi:[0, a] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$,
$\psi:[0, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ are given continuous functions with $\varphi(t)=\phi(t, 0), \psi(x)=\phi(0, x)$ for each $(t, x) \in J, \quad 0=t_{0}<t_{1}<\cdots<t_{m}<t_{m+1}=a, f: J \times C \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, I_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, k=$ $1, \ldots, m, \phi: \tilde{J} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, are given functions and $C:=C\left([-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0], \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ is the space of continuous functions on $[-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0]$.
If $u:[-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0] \longrightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, then for any $(t, x) \in J$ define $u_{(t, x)}$ by

$$
u_{(t, x)}(s, \tau)=u(t+s, x+\tau)
$$

An example is presented in the last part of this section
In Sect. 3.3, we prove a existence of solutions for the following impulsive functional partial hyperbolic differential equations with infinite delay

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(x, y)=f\left(x, y, u_{(x, y)}\right) ; \text { if }(x, y) \in J_{k}, \quad k=0, \ldots, m,  \tag{11}\\
u\left(x_{k}^{+}, y\right)=u\left(x_{k}^{-}, y\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(x_{k}^{-}, y\right)\right), \quad \text { if } y \in[0, b], k=1, \ldots, m,  \tag{12}\\
u(x, y)=\phi(x, y) ; \text { if }(x, y) \in \tilde{J},  \tag{13}\\
u(x, 0)=\varphi(x), x \in[0, a], u(0, y)=\psi(y) ; y \in[0, b], \tag{14}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $J_{0}=\left[0, x_{1}\right] \times[0, b], J_{k}:=\left(x_{k}, x_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b] ; k=1, \ldots, m, z_{k}=\left(x_{k}, 0\right), \quad k=$ $0, \ldots, m, a, b>0, J=[0, a] \times[0, b], \tilde{J}=(-\infty, a] \times(-\infty, b] \backslash(0, a] \times(0, b],{ }^{c} D_{0}^{r}$ is the Caputo fractional derivative of order $r=\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right) \in(0,1] \times(0,1], \varphi:[0, a] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, $\psi:[0, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ are given continuous functions with $\varphi(x)=\phi(x, 0), \psi(y)=\phi(0, y)$ for each $(x, y) \in J, \quad 0=x_{0}<x_{1}<\cdots<x_{m}<x_{m+1}=a, f: J \times \mathcal{B} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, I_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow$ $\mathbb{R}^{n}, k=1, \ldots, m, \phi: \tilde{J} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, are given functions. $\mathcal{B}$ is called a phase space that will be specified in the next Section. If $u:(-\infty, a] \times(-\infty, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, then for any $(x, y) \in J$ define $u_{(x, y)}$ by

$$
u_{(x, y)}(s, t)=u(x+s, y+t), \text { for }(s, t) \in[-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0] .
$$

An example is presented in the last part of this section
In Chapter 4, we study the existence of solutions for fractional impulsive hyperbolic differential equations with state-dependent delay. Section 4.2 deals with the existence of solutions to fractional impulsive hyperbolic differential equations with finite delay

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=f\left(t, x, u_{\left(\rho_{1}\left(t, x, u_{(t, x))}\right), \rho_{2}(t, x, u(t, x))\right)}\right) ; \text { if }(t, x) \in J_{k}, k=0, \ldots, m,  \tag{15}\\
u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \quad \text { if } x \in[0, b], k=1, \ldots, m,  \tag{16}\\
u(t, x)=\phi(t, x) ; \text { if }(t, x) \in \tilde{J}:=[-\alpha, a] \times[-\beta, b] \backslash(0, a] \times(0, b],  \tag{17}\\
u(t, 0)=\varphi(t), t \in[0, a], u(0, x)=\psi(x) ; x \in[0, b], \tag{18}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $J_{0}=\left[0, t_{1}\right] \times[0, b], \quad J_{k}:=\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b], \quad k=1, \ldots, m, z_{k}=\left(t_{k}, 0\right), k=$ $0, \ldots, m, J=[0, a] \times[0, b], a, b, \alpha, \beta>0,0=t_{0}<t_{1}<\cdots<t_{m}<t_{m+1}=a,{ }^{c} D_{0}^{r}$ is the Caputo fractional derivative of order $r=\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right) \in(0,1] \times(0,1], \varphi:[0, a] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$,
$\psi:[0, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ are given continuous functions with $\varphi(t)=\phi(t, 0), \psi(x)=\phi(0, x)$ for each $(t, x) \in J, f: J \times C \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, \rho_{1}, \rho_{2}: J \times C \rightarrow \mathbb{R}, I_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, k=1, \ldots, m, \phi: \tilde{J} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, are given functions and $C$ is the Banach space defined in section 4.2.
An example is presented in the last part of this section.
In Section 4.3, we give our second main result concerning system of impulsive partial hyperbolic differential equation of fractional order with infinite delay

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=f\left(t, x, u_{\left.\left(\rho_{1}\left(t, x, u_{(t, x)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(t, x, u_{(t, x)}\right)\right)\right)}\right) ; \text { if }(t, x) \in J_{k}, k=0, \ldots, m,  \tag{19}\\
u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \quad \text { if } x \in[0, b], k=1, \ldots, m,  \tag{20}\\
u(t, x)=\phi(t, x) ; \text { if }(t, x) \in \tilde{J}^{\prime}:=(-\infty, a] \times(-\infty, b] \backslash(0, a] \times(0, b],  \tag{21}\\
u(t, 0)=\varphi(t), t \in[0, a], u(0, x)=\psi(x) ; x \in[0, b], \tag{22}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $\varphi, \psi, I_{k}$ are as in problem (5.1)-(5.4), $f: J \times \mathcal{B} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, \rho_{1}, \rho_{2}: J \times \mathcal{B} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}, \phi: \tilde{J}^{\prime} \rightarrow$ $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ and $\mathcal{B}$ is a phase space.
Also, we present an example illustrating the applicability of the imposed conditions.
In Chapter 5 we shall be concerned by impulsive initial value problem for differential equations of fractional order with fixed time impulses.

Section 5.2 deals with the existence of solutions of impulsive differential equations of fractional order with finite delay given by

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=f\left(t, x, u_{(t, x)}\right), \text { if }(t, x) \in J_{k}, k=0, \ldots, m,  \tag{23}\\
u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \text { if } x \in[0, b] ; k=1, \ldots, m,  \tag{24}\\
u(t, x)=\phi(t, x) ; \text { if }(t, x) \in \tilde{J},  \tag{25}\\
u(t, 0)=\varphi(t), u(0, x)=\psi(x), t \in[0, a], x \in[0, b], \tag{26}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $J_{0}=\left[0, t_{1}\right] \times[0, b], \quad J_{k}:=\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b], \quad k=1, \ldots, m, z_{k}=\left(t_{k}, 0\right), \quad k=$ $0, \ldots, m, \varphi(0)=\psi(0), J:=[0, \infty) \times[0, \infty), J:=[-\alpha, \infty) \times[-\beta, \infty) \backslash[0, \infty) \times[0, \infty), \alpha, \beta>$ $0,{ }^{c} D_{0}^{r}$ is the standard Caputo's fractional derivative of order $r=\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right) \in(0,1] \times(0,1], f$ : $J \times C\left([-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0], \mathbb{R}^{n}\right) \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, I_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, k=0,1, \ldots, m$ are given functions, for each $(t, x) \in J, \varphi, \psi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, are given absolutely continuous functions and $C\left([-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0], \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ is the space of continuous functions on $[-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0]$. We denote by $u_{(t, x)}$ the element of $C\left([-\alpha, \infty) \times[-\beta, \infty), \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ defined by

$$
u_{(t, x)}(s, \tau)=u(t+s, x+\tau) ; \quad(s, \tau) \in[-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0],
$$

here $u_{(t, x)}(.,$.$) represents the history of the state from time t-\alpha$ up to the present time $t$ and from time $x-\beta$ up to the present time $x$.

In Section 5.3, we investigate the existence of solutions for impulsive hyperbolic differential equations with infinite delay

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=f(t, x, u(t, x)), \text { if }(t, x) \in J_{k}, k=0, \ldots, m, \tag{27}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{gather*}
u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \text { if } x \in[0, b] ; k=1, \ldots, m,  \tag{28}\\
u(t, x)=\phi(t, x) ; \text { if }(t, x) \in \tilde{J}^{\prime},  \tag{29}\\
u(t, 0)=\varphi(t), u(0, x)=\psi(x), t \in[0, a], x \in[0, b] \tag{30}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $\varphi, \psi$ are as in problem (5.1)-(5.3), $\tilde{J}^{\prime}=:(-\infty,+\infty) \times(-\infty,+\infty) \backslash[0, \infty) \times[0, \infty), f$ : $J \times \mathcal{B} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}, \phi: \tilde{J}^{\prime} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ and $\mathcal{B}$ is called a phase space that will be specified in Finally, we present an illustrative example.

## Chapter 1

## Preliminaries

We introduce in this Chapter notations, definitions, fixed point theorems and preliminary facts that will be used in the remainder of this thesis.

### 1.1 Some Notations and definitions

Let $J:=[0, a] \times[0, b], a, b>0$. Denote $L^{1}$ the space of Lebegue integrable functions $u: J \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ with the norm

$$
\|u\|_{L^{1}}=\int_{0}^{a} \int_{0}^{b}\|u(t, x)\| d x d t
$$

Let $L^{\infty}\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ be the Banach space of mesurable functions $u: J \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ wich are bounded, equiped with the norm

$$
\|u\|_{L^{\infty}}=\inf \{c>0:\|u(t, x)\| \leq c, \text { a.e. }(t, x) \in J\}
$$

As usual, by $A C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ we denote the space of absolutely continuous functions from $J$ into $\mathbb{R}^{n}$, and $C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ is the Banach space of all continuous functions from $J$ into $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ with the norm

$$
\|u\|_{\infty}=\sup _{(t, x) \in J}\|u(t, x)\| .
$$

Also $C(J, \mathbb{R})$ is endowed with norm $\|\cdot\|_{\infty}$ defined by

$$
\|u\|_{\infty}=\sup _{(t, x) \in J}|u(t, x)|
$$

If $u \in C\left([-\alpha, a] \times[-\beta, b], \mathbb{R}^{n}\right) ; a, b, \alpha, \beta>0$ then for any $(t, x) \in J$ define $u_{(t, x)}$ by

$$
u_{(t, x)}(s, \theta)=u(t+s, x+\theta)
$$

for $(s, \theta) \in C\left([-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0], \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$. Here $u_{(t, x)}(.,$.$) represents the history of the state$ from time $t-\alpha$ up to the present time $t$ and from time $x-\beta$ uo to the present time $x$.

### 1.2 Some properties of Partial Fractional Calculs

In this section, we introduce notations, definitions and preliminary Lemmas concerning to partial fractional calculs theory

Definition 1.1 [55] Let $r=\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right) \in(0, \infty) \times(0, \infty)$ and $u \in L^{1}\left(J_{k}, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$. The left-sided mixed Riemann-Liouville integral of order $r$ of $u$ is defined by

$$
\left(I_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} u(s, \tau) d \tau d s
$$

In particular,

$$
\left(I_{z_{k}}^{\sigma} u\right)(t, x)=\int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x} u(s, \tau) d \tau d s ; \text { for almost all }(t, x) \in J_{k}
$$

where $\sigma=(1,1)$.
For instance, $I_{z_{k}}^{r} u$ exists for all $r_{1}, r_{2} \in(0, \infty) \times(0, \infty)$, when $u \in L^{1}\left(J_{k}, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$. Note also that when $u \in C\left(J_{k}, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$, then $\left(I_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right) \in C\left(J_{k}, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$, moreover

$$
\left(I_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, 0)=\left(I_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(0, x)=0 ; \quad(t, x) \in J_{k} .
$$

By $1-r$ we mean $\left(1-r_{1}, 1-r_{2}\right) \in(0,1] \times(0,1]$. Denote by $D_{t x}^{2}:=\frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial t \partial x}$, the mixed second order partial derivative.

Definition 1.2 [55] Let $r \in(0,1] \times(0,1]$ and $u \in L^{1}\left(J_{k}, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$. The mixed fractional Riemann-Liouville derivative of order $r$ of $u$ is defined by the expression

$$
D_{z_{k}}^{r} u(t, x)=\left(D_{t x}^{2} I_{z_{k}}^{1-r} u\right)(t, x)
$$

and the Caputo fractional-order derivative of order $r$ of $u$ is defined by the expression

$$
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=\left(I_{z_{k}}^{1-r} \frac{\partial^{2}}{\partial t \partial x} u\right)(t, x) .
$$

and the mixed fractional Riemann-Liouville derivative of order $R$ of $u$ defined by the expression $\left.\left({ }^{R L} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=D_{t x}^{2} I_{z_{k}}^{1-r} u\right)(t, x)$

The case $\sigma=(1,1)$ is included and we have

$$
\left(D_{z_{k}}^{\sigma} u\right)(t, x)=\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{\sigma} u\right)(t, x)=\left(D_{t x}^{2} u\right)(t, x), \text { for almost all }(t, x) \in J_{k} .
$$

Remark 1.3 (Relation between ${ }^{R L} D_{z_{k}}$ and ${ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}$ ) Let $u \in L^{1}(J$,$) and \varphi:[0, a] \rightarrow$ $\mathbb{R}^{n}, \psi:[0, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ be given absolutely continuous functions such that $u(t, 0)=\varphi(t) ; t \in$ $[0, a], u(0, x)=\psi(x) ; x \in[0, b]$ and $\varphi(0)=\psi(0)$. Then we have for $(t, x) \in J$

$$
\left({ }^{R L} D_{z_{k}} u\right)(t, x)=\lambda(t, x)+\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}} u\right)(t, x),
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
\lambda(t, x) & =\frac{t^{-r_{1}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{2}\right) \Gamma\left(1-r_{1}\right)} \int_{0}^{x}(x-s)^{-r_{2}} \psi(s) d s \\
& +\frac{x^{-r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(1-r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t}(t-s)^{-r_{1}} \varphi(s) d s+\frac{t^{-r_{1}} x^{-r_{2}} \varphi(0)}{\Gamma\left(1-r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(1-r_{2}\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

and the dot denotes differentiation
In the sequel we will make use of the following generalization of Gronwall's lemma for two independent variables and singular kernel.

Lemma 1.4 ([37]) Let $v: J \rightarrow[0, \infty)$ be a real function and $\omega(.,$.$) be a nonnegative,$ locally integrable function on J. If there are constants $c>0$ and $0<r_{1}, r_{2}<1$ such that

$$
v(t, x) \leq \omega(t, x)+c \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x} \frac{v(s, \tau)}{(t-s)^{r_{1}}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}}} d \tau d s
$$

then there exists a constant $\delta=\delta\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right)$ such that

$$
v(t, x) \leq \omega(t, x)+\delta c \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x} \frac{\omega(s, \tau)}{(t-s)^{r_{1}}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}}} d \tau d s
$$

for every $(t, x) \in J$.

### 1.3 Phase spaces

The notion of the phase space $\mathcal{B}$ plays an important role in the study of both qualitative and quantitative theory for functional differential equations. A usual choice is a semi-normed space satisfying suitable axioms, which was introduced by Hale and Kato [32] (see [33, 41, 46]).

For any $(x, y) \in J$ denote $E_{(x, y)}:=[0, x] \times\{0\} \cup\{0\} \times[0, y]$, furthermore in case $x=a, y=b$ we write simply $E$. Consider the space $\left(\mathcal{B},\|(., .)\|_{\mathcal{B}}\right)$ is a seminormed linear space of functions mapping $(-\infty, 0] \times(-\infty, 0]$ into $\mathbb{R}^{n}$, and satisfying the following fundamental axioms which were adapted from those introduced by Hale and Kato for ordinary differential functional equations:
$\left(A_{1}\right)$ If $z:(-\infty, a] \times(-\infty, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ and $z_{(x, y)} \in \mathcal{B}$, for all $(x, y) \in E$, then there are constants $H, K, M>0$ such that for any $(x, y) \in J$ the following conditions hold:
(i) $z_{(x, y)}$ is in $\mathcal{B}$;
(ii) $\|z(x, y)\| \leq H\left\|z_{(x, y)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}}$,
(iii) $\left\|z_{(x, y)}\right\|_{B} \leq K \sup _{(s, t) \in[0, x] \times[0, y]}\|z(s, t)\|+M \sup _{(s, t) \in E_{(x, y)}}\left\|z_{(s, t)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}}$,
$\left(A_{2}\right)$ The space $\mathcal{B}$ is complete.
Now, we present some examples of phase spaces ([26, 27]).
Example 1.5 Let $\mathcal{B}$ be the set of all functions $\phi:(-\infty, 0] \times(-\infty, 0] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ which are piece-wise continuous on $[-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0], \alpha, \beta \geq 0$, with the seminorm

$$
\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}=\sup _{(s, t) \in[-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0]}\|\phi(s, t)\|
$$

Then we have $H=K=M=1$. The quotient space $\widehat{\mathcal{B}}=\mathcal{B} /\|\cdot\|_{\mathcal{B}}$ is isometric to the space $C\left([-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0], \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ of all continuous functions from $[-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0]$ into $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ with the supremum norm, this means that partial differential functional equations with finite delay are included in our axiomatic model.

Example 1.6 Let $\gamma \in \mathbb{R}$, and $C_{\gamma}$ be the set of all piece-wise continuous functions $\phi$ : $(-\infty, 0] \times(-\infty, 0] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ for which a limit $\lim _{\|(s, t)\| \rightarrow \infty} e^{\gamma(s+t)} \phi(s, t)$ exists, with the norm

$$
\|\phi\|_{C_{\gamma}}=\sup _{(s, t) \in(-\infty, 0] \times(-\infty, 0]} e^{\gamma(s+t)}\|\phi(s, t)\|
$$

Then we have $H=1$ and $K=M=\max \left\{e^{-\gamma(a+b)}, 1\right\}$.
Example 1.7 Let $\alpha, \beta, \gamma \geq 0$ and let

$$
\|\phi\|_{C L_{\gamma}}=\sup _{(s, t) \in[-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0]}\|\phi(s, t)\|+\int_{-\infty}^{0} \int_{-\infty}^{0} e^{\gamma(s+t)}\|\phi(s, t)\| d t d s
$$

be the seminorm for the space $C L_{\gamma}$ of all functions $\phi:(-\infty, 0] \times(-\infty, 0] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ which are piece-wise continuous on $[-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0]$ measurable on $(-\infty,-\alpha] \times(-\infty, 0] \cup(-\infty, 0] \times$ $(-\infty,-\beta]$, and such that $\|\phi\|_{C L_{\gamma}}<\infty$. Then

$$
H=1, K=\int_{-\alpha}^{0} \int_{-\beta}^{0} e^{\gamma(s+t)} d t d s, M=2 .
$$

### 1.4 Some properties in Fréchet spaces

Let $X$ be a Fréchet space with a family of semi-norms $\left\{\|\cdot\|_{n}\right\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$. We assume that the family of semi-norms $\left\{\|\cdot\|_{n}\right\}$ verifies:

$$
\|u\|_{1} \leq\|u\|_{2} \leq\|u\|_{3} \leq \ldots \quad \text { for every } u \in X
$$

Let $Y \subset X$, we say that $Y$ is bounded if for every $n \in \mathbb{N}$, there exists $\bar{M}_{n}>0$ such that

$$
\|y\|_{n} \leq \bar{M}_{n} \quad \text { for all } v \in Y
$$

To $X$ we associate a sequence of Banach spaces $\left\{\left(X^{n},\|\cdot\|_{n}\right)\right\}$ as follows : For every $n \in \mathbb{N}$, we consider the equivalence relation $\sim_{n}$ defined by : $u \sim_{n} v$ if and only if $\|u-v\|_{n}=0$ for $u, v \in X$. We denote $X^{n}=\left(\left.X\right|_{\sim_{n}},\|\cdot\|_{n}\right)$ the quotient space, the completion of $X^{n}$ with respect to $\|\cdot\|_{n}$. To every $Y \subset X$, we associate a sequence $\left\{Y^{n}\right\}$ of subsets $Y^{n} \subset X^{n}$ as follows : For every $u \in X$, we denote $[u]_{n}$ the equivalence class of $u$ of subset $X^{n}$ and we defined $Y^{n}=\left\{[u]_{n}: u \in Y\right\}$. We denote $\overline{Y^{n}}, \operatorname{int}_{n}\left(Y^{n}\right)$ and $\partial_{n} Y^{n}$, respectively, the closure, the interior and the boundary of $Y^{n}$ with respect to $\|\cdot\|_{n}$ in $X^{n}$. For more information about this subject see [29].

Definition 1.8 Let $X$ be a Fréchet space. A function $N: X \longrightarrow X$ is said to be $a$ contraction if for each $n \in \mathbb{N}$ there exists $k_{n} \in(0,1)$ such that

$$
\|N(u)-N(v)\|_{n} \leq k_{n}\|u-v\|_{n} \text { for all } u, v \in X
$$

### 1.5 Some fixed point theorems

Theorem 1.9 (Nonlinear Alternative of Frigon and Granas, [29]).
Let $X$ be a Fréchet space and $Y \subset X$ a closed subset in $Y$ and let $N: Y \rightarrow X$ be a contraction such that $N(Y)$ is bounded.
Then one of the following statements holds :
(S1) $N$ has a unique fixed point ;
(S2) There exists $\lambda \in[0,1), n \in \mathbb{N}$ and $x \in \partial_{n} Y^{n}$ such that $\|x-\lambda N(x)\|_{n}=0$.
Theorem 1.10 (Burton-Kirk)([25]) Let $X$ be a Banach space, and $A, B: X \rightarrow X$ two operators satisfying:
(i) $A$ is completely continuous, and
(ii) $B$ is a contraction.

## Then either

(a) the operator equation $u=A(u)+B(u)$ has a solution, or
(b) the set $\mathcal{E}=\left\{u \in X: u=\lambda A(u)+\lambda B\left(\frac{u}{\lambda}\right)\right.$, for $\left.\lambda \in(0,1)\right\}$ is unbounded.

## Chapter 2

## Impulsive Partial Hyperbolic Differential Equations of Fractional Order

### 2.1 Introduction

This chapter deals with the existence of solutions for impulsive initial value problem for differential equations of fractional order given by

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=f(t, x, u(t, x)), \text { if }(t, x) \in J_{k}, k=0, \ldots, m,  \tag{2.1}\\
u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \text { if } x \in[0, b] ; k=1, \ldots, m,  \tag{2.2}\\
u(t, 0)=\varphi(t), u(0, x)=\psi(x), t \in[0, a], x \in[0, b], \tag{2.3}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $J_{0}=\left[0, t_{1}\right] \times[0, b], \quad J_{k}:=\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b], \quad k=1, \ldots, m, z_{k}=\left(t_{k}, 0\right), k=$ $0, \ldots, m, J=[0, a] \times[0, b], a, b>0,{ }^{c} D_{0}^{r}$ is the Caputo fractional derivative of order $r=\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right) \in(0,1] \times(0,1], 0=t_{0}<t_{1}<\cdots<t_{m}<t_{m+1}=a, f: J \times \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, $I_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, k=0,1, \ldots, m$ are given functions, $\varphi:[0, a] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ and $\psi:[0, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ are given absolutely continuous functions with $\varphi(0)=\psi(0)$.

Next we consider the following nonlocal initial value problem

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=f(t, x, u(t, x)), \text { if }(t, x) \in J_{k}, k=0, \ldots, m,  \tag{2.4}\\
u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \text { if } x \in[0, b] ; k=1, \ldots, m,  \tag{2.5}\\
u(t, 0)+Q(u)=\varphi(t), u(0, x)+K(u)=\psi(x), t \in[0, a], x \in[0, b], \tag{2.6}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $f, \varphi, \psi, I_{k} ; k=1, \ldots, m$, are as in problem (2.1)-(2.3) and $Q, K: P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right) \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ are continuous functions. $P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ is a Banach space to be specified later.

### 2.2 Existence of Solutions

First of all, we define what we mean by a solution of the initial value problem (2.1)-(2.3).
$P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)=\left\{u: J \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}: u \in C\left(\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b], \mathbb{R}^{n}\right) ; k=1, \ldots, m\right.$, and there exist $u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)$ and $u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right) ; k=1, \ldots, m$, with $\left.u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}, x\right)\right\}$.

This set is a Banach space with the norm

$$
\|u\|_{P C}=\sup _{(t, x) \in J}|u(t, x)| .
$$

Definition 2.1 A function $u \in P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ is said to be a solution of (2.1)-(2.3) if $u$ satisfies the equation $\left({ }^{c} D^{r} u\right)(t, x)=f(t, x, u(t, x))$ on $J^{\prime}$, and conditions (2.2), (2.3) are satisfied.

Let $h(t, x) \in C\left(\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b], \mathbb{R}^{n}\right), \quad z_{k}=\left(t_{k}, 0\right)$, and

$$
\mu_{k}(t, x)=u(t, 0)+u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)-u\left(t_{k}^{+}, 0\right), k=0, \ldots, m .
$$

For the existence of solutions for the problem (2.1)-(2.2), we need the following lemma:

## Lemma 2.2 $A$ function $u \in C\left(\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b], \mathbb{R}^{n}\right), k=0, \ldots, m$ is a solution of the

 differential equation$$
\begin{equation*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=h(t, x) ; \quad(t, x) \in\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b], \tag{2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

if and only if $u(t, x)$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(t, x)=\mu_{k}(t, x)+\left(I_{z_{k}}^{r} h\right)(t, x) ;(t, x) \in\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b] . \tag{2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Let $u(t, x)$ be a solution of (2.7). Then, from the definition of $\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}^{+}}^{r} u\right)(x, x)$, we have

$$
I_{z_{k}^{+}}^{1-r}\left(D_{t x}^{2} u\right)(t, x)=h(t, x) .
$$

Which yield

$$
I_{z_{k}^{+}}^{r}\left(I_{z_{k}}^{1-r} D_{t x}^{2} u\right)(t, x)=\left(I_{z_{k}^{+}}^{r} h\right)(t, x),
$$

then

$$
I_{z_{k}^{+}}^{1} D_{t x}^{2} u(t, x)=\left(I_{z_{k}^{+}}^{r} h\right)(t, x) .
$$

Since

$$
I_{z_{k}^{+}}^{1}\left(D_{t x}^{2} u\right)(t, x)=u(t, x)-u(t, 0)-u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)+u\left(t_{k}^{+}, 0\right),
$$

we have

$$
u(t, x)=\mu_{k}(t, x)+\left(I_{z_{k}^{+}}^{r} h\right)(t, x) .
$$

Now let $u(t, x)$ satisfies (2.8). It is clear that $u(t, x)$ satisfies

$$
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=h(t, x), \quad \text { on }\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b] .
$$

In all what follows set

$$
\mu(t, x)=\mu_{0}(t, x),(t, x) \in J
$$

Lemma 2.3 Let $0<r_{1}, r_{2} \leq 1$ and let $h: J \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ be continuous. $A$ function $u$ is $a$ solution of the fractional integral equation

$$
u(t, x)=\left\{\begin{array}{lr}
\mu(t, x)+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d s d y & \text { if }(t, x) \in\left[0, t_{1}\right] \times[0, b],  \tag{2.9}\\
\mu(t, x)+\sum_{i=1}^{k}\left(I_{i}\left(u\left(t_{i}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{i}\left(u\left(t_{i}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) & \text { if }(t, x) \in\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b], \\
+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{i=1}^{k} \int_{t_{i-1}}^{t_{i}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{i}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d s d y & k=1, \ldots, m, \\
+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1} \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)\right.} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d s d y &
\end{array}\right.
$$

if and only if $u$ is a solution of the fractional initial value problem

$$
\begin{gather*}
{ }^{c} D^{r} u(t, x)=h(t, x), \quad(t, x) \in J^{\prime},  \tag{2.10}\\
u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \quad k=1, \ldots, m \tag{2.11}
\end{gather*}
$$

Proof. Assume $u$ satisfies (2.10)-(2.11). If $(t, x) \in\left[0, t_{1}\right] \times[0, b]$ then

$$
{ }^{c} D^{r} u(t, x)=h(t, x) .
$$

Lemma 2.2 implies

$$
u(t, x)=\mu(t, x)+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d s d y
$$

If $(t, x) \in\left(t_{1}, t_{2}\right] \times[0, b]$ then Lemma 2.2 implies

$$
\begin{aligned}
u(t, x) & =\mu_{1}(t, x)+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d s d y \\
& =\varphi(t)+u\left(t_{1}^{+}, x\right)-u\left(t_{1}^{+}, 0\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d s d y \\
& =\varphi(t)+u\left(t_{1}^{-}, x\right)-u\left(t_{1}^{-}, 0\right)+I_{1}\left(u\left(t_{1}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{1}\left(u\left(t_{1}^{-}, 0\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d s d y \\
& =\varphi(t)+u\left(t_{1}, x\right)-u\left(t_{1}, 0\right)+I_{1}\left(u\left(t_{1}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{1}\left(u\left(t_{1}^{-}, 0\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d s d y \\
& =\mu(t, x)+I_{1}\left(u\left(t_{1}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{1}\left(u\left(t_{1}^{-}, 0\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{1}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d s d y \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d s d y
\end{aligned}
$$

If $(t, x) \in\left(t_{2}, t_{3}\right] \times[0, b]$ then again from Lemma 2.2 we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
u(t, x) & =\mu_{2}(t, x)+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{2}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d s d y \\
& =\varphi(t)+u\left(t_{2}^{+}, x\right)-u\left(t_{2}^{+}, 0\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{2}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d s d y \\
& =\varphi(t)+u\left(t_{2}^{-}, x\right)-u\left(t_{2}^{-}, 0\right)+I_{2}\left(u\left(t_{2}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{2}\left(u\left(t_{2}^{-}, 0\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{2}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d s d y \\
& =\varphi(t)+u\left(t_{2}, x\right)-u\left(t_{2}, 0\right)+I_{2}\left(u\left(t_{2}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{2}\left(u\left(t_{2}^{-}, 0\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{2}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d s d y \\
& =\mu(t, x)+I_{2}\left(u\left(t_{2}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{2}\left(u\left(t_{2}^{-}, 0\right)\right)+I_{1}\left(u\left(t_{1}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{1}\left(u\left(t_{1}^{-}, 0\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{1}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d s d y \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d s d y \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{2}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d s d y
\end{aligned}
$$

If $(t, x) \in\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b]$ then from Lemma 2.2 we get (2.9).
Conversely, assume that $u$ satisfies the impulsive fractional integral equation (2.9). If $(t, y) \in\left[0, t_{1}\right] \times[0, b]$ and using the fact that ${ }^{c} D^{r}$ is the left inverse of $I^{r}$ we get

$$
{ }^{c} D^{r} u(t, x)=h(t, x), \quad \text { for each }(t, x) \in\left[0, t_{1}\right] \times[0, b] .
$$

If $(t, x) \in\left[t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right) \times[0, b], k=1, \ldots, m$ and using the fact that ${ }^{c} D^{r} C=0$, where $C$ is a constant, we get

$$
{ }^{c} D^{r} u(t, x)=h(t, x), \text { for each }(t, x) \in\left[t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right) \times[0, b] .
$$

Also, we can easily show that

$$
u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \quad x \in[0, b], k=1, \ldots, m
$$

In this section, we give our main existence result for problem (2.1)-(2.3).
Definition 2.4 A function $u \in P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ with its mixed derivative $D_{x y}^{2}$ exists and is integrable is said to be a solution of (2.1)-(2.3) if u satisfies the equation $\left({ }^{c} D^{r} u\right)(t, x)=$ $f(t, x, u(t, x))$, and conditions (2.2), (2.3) are satisfied.

Our result is based upon the fixed point theorem due to Burton and Kirk.
Let us introduce the following hypotheses which are assumed after:
(H1) The functions $I_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ are continuous.
(H2) There exist $p, q \in C\left(J, \mathbb{R}_{+}\right)$such that

$$
\|f(t, x, u)\| \leq p(t, x)+q(t, x)\|u\|, \text { for }(t, x) \in J \text { and each } u \in \mathbb{R}^{n} .
$$

(H3) There exists $l>0$ such that

$$
\left\|I_{k}(u)-I_{k}(v)\right\| \leq l\|u-v\| \text { for each } u, v \in \mathbb{R}^{n}
$$

Theorem 2.5 Assume that hypotheses (H1)-(H3) hold. If

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 m l+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}} p^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}<1 \tag{2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

then the IVP (2.1)-(2.3) has at least one solution on $J$
Proof: We shall reduce the existence of solutions of (2.1)-(2.3) to a fixed point problem. Consider the operator $N: P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right) \longrightarrow P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ defined by

$$
\begin{aligned}
N(u)(t, x) & =\mu(t, x)+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} f(s, y, u(s, y)) d y d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} f(s, y, u(s, y)) d y d s
\end{aligned}
$$

and the operators $F, G: P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right) \longrightarrow P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$

$$
\begin{gathered}
F(u)(t, x)=\mu(t, x)+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) \\
G(u)(t, x)= \\
\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} f(s, y, u(s, y)) d y d s \\
+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} f(s, y, u(s, y)) d y d s .
\end{gathered}
$$

Then the problem of finding the solution of the $\operatorname{IV} P(2.1)-(2.3)$ is reduced to finding the solutions of the operator equation $F(u)+G(u)=u$. We shall show that the operators
$F$ and $G$ satisfy the conditions of Theorem (2.5). The proof will be given by several steps.
Step 1: $G$ is continuous.
Let $\left\{u_{n}\right\}$ be a sequence such that $u_{n} \rightarrow u$ in $P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$, then for each $(t, x) \in J$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|G\left(u_{n}\right)(t, x)-G(u)(t, x)\right\| \\
& \leq \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, y, u_{n}(s, y)\right)-f(s, y, u(s, y))\right\| d y d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, y, u_{n}(s, y)\right)-f(s, y, u(s, y))\right\| d y d s . \\
& \leq \frac{\left\|f\left(., ., u_{n(.,)}\right)-f\left(., ., u_{(., .)}\right)\right\|}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s \\
& +\frac{\left\|f\left(., ., u_{n(., .)}\right)-f\left(.,, u_{(.,)}\right)\right\|}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $f$ is continuous function, we have

$$
\left\|G\left(u_{n}\right)-G(u)\right\|_{P C} \leq \frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\left\|f\left(., ., u_{n(.,)}\right)-f\left(., ., u_{(., .)}\right)\right\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \rightarrow 0 \text { as } n \rightarrow \infty
$$

Thus $G$ is continuous.
Step 2: $G$ maps bounded sets into bounded sets in $P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$. Indeed, it is enough to show that for any positive real number $\eta^{*}$, there exists a positive constant $l$ such that, for each $u \in B_{\eta^{*}}=\left\{u \in P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right):\|u\|_{P C} \leq \eta^{*}\right\}$ we have $\|G(u)\|_{P C} \leq l$ By (H2) we have for each $(t, x) \in J$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|G(u)(t, x)\| & \leq \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1}\|f(s, y, u(s, y))\| d s d y \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1}\|f(s, y, u(s, y))\| d s d y \\
& \leq \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d s d y \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d s d y
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\|G(u)\|_{P C} \leq \frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\left(\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}\right)}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}:=l^{*}
$$

Hence $\|G(u)\|_{P C} \leq l^{*}$.

Step 3: $G$ maps bounded sets into equicontinuous sets in $P C$.
Let $\left(t_{1}, x_{1}\right),\left(t_{2}, x_{2}\right) \in(0, a] \times(0, b], t_{1}<t_{2}, x_{1}<x_{2}, B_{\eta}$ be a bounded set as in step 2 ,
let $u \in B_{\eta^{*}}$ be a bounded set of $P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ as in Step 2. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|G(u)\left(t_{2}, x_{2}\right)-G(u)\left(t_{1}, x_{1}\right)\right\| \\
& \leq \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left[\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(x_{1}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] \times|f(s, \tau, u(s, \tau))| d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}|f(s, \tau, u(s, \tau))| d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left[\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(t_{1}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{1}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] \times|f(s, \tau, u(s, \tau))| d \tau d x \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}|f(s, \tau, u(s, \tau))| d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}|f(s, \tau, u(s, \tau))| d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}|f(s, \tau, u(s, \tau))| d \tau d s \\
& \leq \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left[\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(x_{1}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left[\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(t_{1}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{1}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] d \tau d x \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& \leq \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left[\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(x_{1}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\left[2 x_{2}^{r_{2}}\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right)^{r_{1}}+2 t_{2}^{r_{1}}\left(x_{2}-x_{1}\right)^{r_{2}}\right. \\
& \left.+t_{1}^{r_{1}} x_{1}^{r_{2}}-t_{2}^{r_{1}} x_{2}^{r_{2}}-2\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right)^{r_{1}}\left(x_{2}-x_{1}\right)^{r_{2}}\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

As $t_{1} \rightarrow t_{2}, x_{1} \rightarrow x_{2}$ the right-hand side of the above inequality tends to zero.

As a consequence of Steps 1 to 3, together with the Arzela-Ascoli theorem, we can conclude that $G: P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right) \rightarrow P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ is continuous and completely continuous.

Step 4: $F$ is a contraction.
Let $u, v \in P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$, then we have for each $(t, x) \in J$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& |F(u)(t, x)-F(v)(t, x)| \\
& \leq \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left|I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(v\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)\right|+\left|I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(v\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right|\right) \\
& \leq \sum_{k=1}^{m} l\left(\|u-v\|_{P C}+\|u-v\|_{P C}\right) \\
& \leq 2 m l\|u-v\|_{P C} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\|F(u)-F(v)\|_{P C} \leq 2 m l\|u-v\|_{P C} .
$$

Hence by (2.12), $F$ is a contraction.

## Step 5: (A priori bounds)

Now it remains to show that the set

$$
\mathcal{E}=\left\{u \in P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right): u=\lambda F\left(\frac{u}{\lambda}\right)+\lambda G(u), \text { for some } \lambda \in(0,1)\right\}
$$

is bounded. Let $u \in \mathcal{E}$, then $u=\lambda F\left(\frac{u}{\lambda}\right)+\lambda G(u)$. Thus, for each $(t, x) \in J$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
u(t, x) & =\lambda \mu(t, x)+\sum_{k=1}^{m} \lambda\left(\left|I_{k} \frac{u\left(t_{k}^{-}, y\right)}{\lambda}\right|+\left|I_{k} \frac{u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)}{\lambda}\right|\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} f(s, \tau, u(s, \tau)) d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} f(s, \tau, u(s, t)) d \tau d s
\end{aligned}
$$

This implies by $(H 2)$ and $(H 3)$ that, for each $(t, x) \in J$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
|u(t, x)| & \leq \lambda|\mu(t, x)|+\sum_{k=1}^{m} \lambda\left(\left|I_{k} \frac{u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)}{\lambda}\right|-\left|I_{k}(0)\right|+\left|I_{k} \frac{u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)}{\lambda}\right|-\left|I_{k}(0)\right|\right) \\
& +2 \lambda \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left|I_{k}(0)\right|+\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}|u(s, \tau)|_{P C} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}|u(s, \tau)|_{P C} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& \leq\|\mu(t, x)\|+l \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right|+\left|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right|\right)+2 I^{*} \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}|u(s, \tau)|_{P C} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}|u(s, \tau)|_{P C} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
I^{*}=\sum_{k=1}^{m}\left|I_{k}(0)\right| .
$$

We have for $(t, x) \in J$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|u(t, x)\| & \leq\|\mu\|+2 m l\|u\|_{P C}+2 I^{*} \\
& +\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\|u\|_{P C}
\end{aligned}
$$

Then

$$
\|u\|_{P C}\left(1-2 m l-\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\right) \leq \mid \mu \|_{\infty}+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}:=M .
$$

Thus

$$
\|u\|_{P C} \leq \frac{M}{1-2 m l-\frac{2 a^{r_{1} b^{r} 2 p^{*}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}}:=M^{*}
$$

This shows that the set $\mathcal{E}$ is bounded. As a consequence of Theorem 2.5 we deduce that $F+G$ has a fixed point which is a solution of problem (2.1)-(2.3).

### 2.3 Nonlocal impulsive partial differential equations

Now we present (without proof) an existence result for the nonlocal initial value problem (2.4)-(2.6).

Definition 2.6 A function $u \in P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ is said to be a solution of integrable is said to be a solution of (4.10)-(4.12) if $u$ satisfies the equations (2.4)-(2.6) on $J$, and conditions (2.5), (2.6) are satisfied.

Theorem 2.7 Assume (H1)-(H3) hold, and moreover we assume that
( $\left.H^{\prime} 1\right)$ There exists $\tilde{k}>0$ such that

$$
\|Q(u)-Q(v)\| \leq \tilde{k}\|u-v\|_{P C}, \text { for any } u, v \in P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)
$$

( $\left.H^{\prime} 2\right)$ There exists $k^{*}>0$ such that

$$
\|K(u)-K(v)\| \leq k^{*}\|u-v\|_{P C}, \text { for any } u, v \in P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)
$$

hold. If

$$
\tilde{k}+k^{*}+2 m l+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}} p^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}<1,
$$

then there exists at least one solution for IVP (2.4)-(2.6) on $J$.

### 2.4 An Example

In this section we give an example to illustrate the usefulness of our main results. Let us consider the following impulsive partial hyperbolic differential equations of the form

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{0}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=\frac{1}{8 e^{t+x+3}} \frac{|u(t, x)|}{(1+|u(t, x)|)^{2}}, \quad \text { if }(t, x) \in J_{0} \cup J_{1},  \tag{2.13}\\
u\left(\frac{1}{3}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(\frac{1}{3}^{-}, x\right)+\frac{1}{6 e^{t+x+4}} \frac{\left|u\left(\frac{1}{3}^{-}, x\right)\right|}{\left(15+\left|u\left(\frac{1}{3}^{-}, x\right)\right|\right)}, \text { if } x \in[0,1],  \tag{2.14}\\
u(t, 0)=t, u(0, x)=x^{2}, t \in[0,1], x \in[0,1], \tag{2.15}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $J_{0}=\left[0, \frac{1}{3}\right] \times[0,1], J_{1}=\left(\frac{1}{3}, 1\right] \times[0,1]$. Set

$$
f(t, x, u)=\frac{1}{8 e^{t+x+3}} \frac{|u(t, x)|}{(1+|u(t, x)|)},(t, x) \in[0,1] \times[0,1] .
$$

Hence $\left(H_{2}\right)$ is satisfied with

$$
p(t, x)=\frac{1}{8 e^{t+x+3}} \text { and } q(t, x)=\frac{2}{8 e^{t+x+3}}
$$

and

$$
I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)=\frac{1}{6 e^{t+x+4}} \frac{\left|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right|}{\left(15+\left|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right|\right)}, x \in[0,1] .
$$

For each $u, v$ and $(t, x) \in[0,1] \times[0,1]$ we have

$$
\left|I_{k}(u)-I_{k}(v)\right| \leq \frac{1}{6 e^{4}}|u-v|
$$

Hence $\left(H_{3}\right)$ is satisfied. We shall show that condition (4.15) holds with $a=b=1$ and $m=1$. Indeed,

$$
2 m l+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}} p^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}=\frac{1}{3 e^{4}}+\frac{1}{4 \Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}<1
$$

which is satisfied for each $\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right) \in(0,1] \times(0,1]$. Consequently Theorem 2.5 implies that problem (5.10)-(5.12) has a solution defined on $[0,1] \times[0,1]$.

## Chapter 3

## Impulsive Partial Hyperbolic Functional Differential Equations of Fractional Order with Delay

### 3.1 Introduction

In this Chapter, we prove sufficient conditions for the existence solutions for fractional impulsive partial differential equations with delay,

### 3.2 Impulsive Partial Differential Equations with Finite Delay

### 3.2.1 Introduction

In this section, we study the existence of solutions for the following impulsive partial hyperbolic differential equations:

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=f\left(t, x, u_{(t, x)}\right) ; \quad \text { if }(t, x) \in J_{k}, \quad k=0, \ldots, m,  \tag{3.1}\\
u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \quad \text { if } x \in[0, b], k=1, \ldots, m,  \tag{3.2}\\
u(t, x)=\phi(t, x) ; \text { if }(t, x) \in \tilde{J},  \tag{3.3}\\
u(t, 0)=\varphi(t), t \in[0, a], u(0, x)=\psi(x) ; x \in[0, b], \tag{3.4}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $J_{0}=\left[0, t_{1}\right] \times[0, b], \quad J_{k}:=\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right]_{\tilde{J}} \times[0, b], k=1, \ldots, m, z_{k}=\left(t_{k}, 0\right), k=$ $0, \ldots, m, a, b, \alpha, \beta>0, J=[0, a] \times[0, b], \tilde{J}=[-\alpha, a] \times[-\beta, b] \backslash(0, a] \times(0, b],{ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r}$ is the Caputo fractional derivative of order $r=\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right) \in(0,1] \times(0,1], \varphi:[0, a] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, $\psi:[0, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ are given continuous functions with $\varphi(t)=\phi(t, 0), \psi(x)=\phi(0, x)$ for each $(t, x) \in J, \quad 0=t_{0}<t_{1}<\cdots<t_{m}<t_{m+1}=a, f: J \times C \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, I_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, k=$
$1, \ldots, m, \phi: \tilde{J} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, are given functions and $C:=C\left([-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0], \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ is the space of continuous functions on $[-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0]$.
If $u:[-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0] \longrightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, then for any $(t, x) \in J$ define $u_{(t, x)}$ by

$$
u_{(t, x)}(s, \tau)=u(t+s, x+\tau)
$$

### 3.2.2 Existence Results

In this section, we give our main existence result for problem (5.1)-(5.4).
Set $J_{k}=\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times(0, b]$. Consider the Banach space

$$
\begin{aligned}
P C & :=P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right) \\
& =\left\{u: J \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}: u \in C\left(J_{k}, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right), k=1, \ldots, m, \text { and there exist } u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right. \text { and } \\
& \left.u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right), k=1, \ldots, m, \text { with } u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}, x\right)\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

with the norm

$$
\|u\|_{P C}=\sup _{(t, x) \in J}|u(t, x)| .
$$

Set

$$
\left.\Omega=\left\{u:[-\alpha, a] \times[-\beta, b] \longrightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}\right),\left.u\right|_{\tilde{J}} \in C \text { and }\left.u\right|_{[0, a] \times[0, b]} \in P C\right\} .
$$

Definition 3.1 A function $u \in \Omega$ such that its mixed derivative $D_{t x}^{2}$ exists on $J^{\prime}$ is said to be a solution of (5.1)-(5.4) if $u$ satisfies the condition (5.3) on $\tilde{J}$, the equation (5.1) on $J^{\prime}$ and conditions (5.2), (5.4) are satisfied on $J$.

Lemma 3.2 [7] Let $0<r_{1}, r_{2} \leq 1$ and let $h: J \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ be continuous. A function $u$ is a solution of the fractional integral equation

$$
u(t, x)=\left\{\begin{array}{lr}
\phi(t, x) & \text { if }(t, x) \in \tilde{J}, \\
\mu(t, x)+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) & \text { if }(t, x) \in J, \\
+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d y d s & k=1, \ldots, m, \\
+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d y d s, &
\end{array}\right.
$$

if and only if $u$ is a solution of the fractional initial value problem

$$
\begin{align*}
& { }^{c} D^{r} u(t, x)=h(t, x), \quad(t, x) \in J_{k}, \quad k=0, \ldots, m  \tag{3.6}\\
& u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \quad k=1, \ldots, m \tag{3.7}
\end{align*}
$$

Our result is based upon the fixed point theorem due to Burton and Kirk. Let us introduce the following hypotheses which are assumed to hold in the sequel.
(H1) The functions $I_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ are continuous.

### 3.2. IMPULSIVE PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS WITH FINITE DELAY29

(H2) There exist $p, q \in C\left(J, \mathbb{R}_{+}\right)$such that

$$
\|f(t, x, u)\| \leq p(t, x)+q(t, x)\|u\|_{C}, \text { for }(t, x) \in J \text { and each } u \in C .
$$

(H3) There exists $l>0$ such that

$$
\left\|I_{k}(u)-I_{k}(v)\right\| \leq l\|u-v\| \text { for each } u, v \in \mathbb{R}^{n}, k=1, \ldots, m
$$

Theorem 3.3 Assume that hypotheses (H1)-(H3) hold. If

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 m l<1, \tag{3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

then the IV P (5.1)-(5.4) has at least one solution on $J$.
Proof. We shall reduce the existence of solutions of (5.1)-(5.4) to a fixed point problem. Consider the operator $N: \Omega \longrightarrow \Omega$ defined by

$$
N(u)(t, x)= \begin{cases}\phi(t, x) & \text { if }(t, x) \in \tilde{J}, \\ \mu(t, x)+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) & \text { if }(t, x) \in J, \quad k=1, \ldots, m, \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} & \\ \times f\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right) d y d s \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} \\ \times f\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right) d y d s\end{cases}
$$

Consider the operators $F, G: \Omega \rightarrow \Omega$ defined by,

$$
G(u)(t, x)=\left\{\begin{array}{lr}
\phi(t, x), & (t, x) \in \tilde{J}, \\
+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} & k=1, \ldots, m \\
\times f\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right) d y d s & \\
+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} & \\
\times f\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right) d y d s, & (t, x) \in J .
\end{array}\right.
$$

and

$$
F(u)(t, x)= \begin{cases}0, & (t, x) \in \tilde{J} \\ \mu(t, x)+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right), & (t, x) \in J\end{cases}
$$

Then the problem of finding the solution of the $I V P(5.1)-(5.3)$ is reduced to finding the solutions of the operator equation $F(u)+G(u)=u$. We shall show that the operators $F$

## 30CHAPTER 3. FRACTIONAL IMPULSIVE PARTIAL FUNCTIONAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIC

and $G$ satisfy the conditions of Theorem 3.3. The proof will be given by several steps.
Step 1: $G$ is continuous.
Let $\left\{u_{n}\right\}$ be a sequence such that $u_{n} \rightarrow u$ in $C$, then for each $(t, x) \in J$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|G\left(u_{n}\right)(t, x)-G(u)(t, x)\right\| \\
& \leq \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, y, u_{n(s, y)}\right)-f\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right\| d y d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, y, u_{n(s, y)}\right)-f\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right\| d y d s . \\
& \leq \frac{\left\|f\left(., ., u_{n(.,)}\right)-f\left(., ., u_{(., .)}\right)\right\|}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s \\
& +\frac{\left\|f\left(., ., u_{n(., .)}\right)-f\left(.,, u_{(.,)}\right)\right\|}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $f$ is a continuous function, we have

$$
\left\|G\left(u_{n}\right)-G(u)\right\|_{\infty} \leq \frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\left\|f\left(., ., u_{n(., .)}\right)-f\left(., ., u_{(., .)}\right)\right\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \rightarrow 0 \text { as } n \rightarrow \infty
$$

Thus $G$ is continuous.
Step 2: $G$ maps bounded sets into bounded sets in $C$.
Indeed, it is enough show that for any $\eta^{*}$, there exists a positive constant $l$ such that, for each $u \in B_{\eta^{*}}=\left\{u \in C:\|u\|_{\infty} \leq \eta^{*}\right\}$ we have $\|G(u)\|_{C} \leq l$.
By (H2) we have for each $(t, x) \in J$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|G(u)(t, x)\| & \leq \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right\| d y d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right\| d y d s \\
& \leq \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\|G(u)\|_{C} \leq \frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\left(\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}\right)}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}:=l^{*} .
$$

Hence $\|G(u)\|_{\widetilde{P C}} \leq l^{*}$.

### 3.2. IMPULSIVE PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS WITH FINITE DELAY31

Step 3: $G$ maps bounded sets into equicontinuous sets in $C$.
Let $\left(t_{1}, x_{1}\right),\left(t_{2}, x_{2}\right) \in(0, a] \times(0, b], t_{1}<t_{2}, x_{1}<x_{2}, B_{\eta}$ be a bounded set as in Step 2, let $u \in B_{\eta^{*}}$ be a bounded set of $C$ as in Step 2. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|G(u)\left(t_{2}, x_{2}\right)-G(u)\left(t_{1}, x_{1}\right)\right\| \\
& \leq \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left[\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(x_{1}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] \times\left\|f\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right\| d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right\| d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left[\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(t_{1}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{1}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] \times\left\|f\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right\| d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\left|f\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right| d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right\| d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right\| d \tau d s \\
& \leq \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left[\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(x_{1}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)+1} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left[\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(t_{1}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{1}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& \leq \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left[\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(x_{1}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\left[2 x_{2}^{r_{2}}\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right)^{r_{1}}+2 t_{2}^{r_{1}}\left(x_{2}-x_{1}\right)^{r_{2}}\right. \\
& \left.+t_{1}^{r_{1}} x_{1}^{r_{2}}-t_{2}^{r_{1}} x_{2}^{r_{2}}-2\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right)^{r_{1}}\left(x_{2}-x_{1}\right)^{r_{2}}\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

As $t_{1} \rightarrow t_{2}, x_{1} \rightarrow x_{2}$ the right-hand side of the above inequality tends to zero.
As a consequence of Steps 1 to 3, together with the Arzela-Ascoli theorem, we can conclude that $G: \overline{P C} \rightarrow \overline{P C}$ is continuous and completely continuous.

Step 4: $F$ is a contraction.
Let $u, v \in C$, then we have for each $(t, x) \in J$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \|F(u)(t, x)-F(v)(t, x)\| \\
& \leq \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(v\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)\right\|+\left\|I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(v\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right\|\right) \\
& \leq \sum_{k=1}^{m} l\left(\|u-v\|_{C}+\|u-v\|_{C}\right) \\
& \leq 2 m l\|u-v\|_{C}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\|F(u)-F(v)\|_{C} \leq 2 m l\|u-v\|_{C}
$$

Hence by (3.8), $F$ is a contraction.

## Step 5: (A priori bounds)

Now it remains to show that the set

$$
\mathcal{E}=\left\{u \in C: u=\lambda F\left(\frac{u}{\lambda}\right)+\lambda G(u) \text { for some } \lambda \in(0,1)\right\}
$$

is bounded. Let $u \in \mathcal{E}$, then $u=\lambda F\left(\frac{u}{\lambda}\right)+\lambda G(u)$. Thus, for each $(t, x) \in J$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
u(t, x) & =\lambda \mu(t, x)+\sum_{k=1}^{m} \lambda\left(I_{k}\left(\frac{u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)}{\lambda}\right)+I_{k}\left(\frac{u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)}{\lambda}\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right) d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right) d \tau d s .
\end{aligned}
$$

### 3.2. IMPULSIVE PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS WITH FINITE DELAY33

This implies by $(H 2)$ and $(H 3)$ that, for each $(t, x) \in J$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|u(t, x)\| & \leq\|\mu(t, x)\|+\sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|I_{k} u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|-\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\|+\left\|I_{k} u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|-\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\|\right) \\
& +2 \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\|+\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|u_{(s, \tau)}\right\|_{C} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|u_{(s, \tau)}\right\|_{C} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& \leq\|\mu(t, x)\|+l \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*} \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|u_{(s, \tau)}\right\|_{C} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|u_{(s, \tau)}\right\|_{C} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s,
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
I^{*}=\sum_{k=1}^{m}\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\| .
$$

We consider the function $\gamma$ defined by

$$
\gamma(t, x)=\sup \{|u(s, \tau)|:-\alpha \leq s \leq t,-\beta \leq \tau \leq x, 0 \leq t \leq a, 0 \leq x \leq b\}
$$

Let $\left(t^{*}, x^{*}\right) \in[-\alpha, t] \times[-\beta, x]$ be such that $\gamma(t, x)=\left|u\left(t^{*}, x^{*}\right)\right|$. If $\left(t^{*}, x^{*}\right) \in J$, then by the previous inequality, we have for $(t, x) \in J$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\gamma(t, x) & \leq\|\mu(t, x)\|+l \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*} \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\left(\sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right. \\
& \left.+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right)+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

If $\left(t^{*}, x^{*}\right) \in \tilde{J}$, then $\gamma(t, x)=\|\phi\|_{C}$ and the previous inequality holds. If $(t, x) \in J$, by Lemma 1.4 implies that there exists $\tilde{k}=\tilde{k}\left(r_{2}, r_{2}\right)$ such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\gamma(t, x) & \leq\left(\|\mu(t, x)\|+l \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\right) \\
& \times\left(1+\tilde{k} \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s\right) \\
& \leq\left(\|\mu(t, x)\|+l \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\right) \\
& \times\left(1+\tilde{k} \frac{\|p\|_{\infty} a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\right):=\tilde{R} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since for every $(t, x) \in J,\|u(t, x)\|_{C} \leq \gamma(t, x)$. This shows that the set $\mathcal{E}$ is bounded. As a consequence of Theorem 4.2 we deduce that $F+G$ has a fixed point $u$ which is a solution of problem (5.1)-(5.4).

### 3.2.3 An Example

As an application of our results we consider the following impulsive partial hyperbolic differential equations of the form

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{0}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=\frac{1}{\left(10 e^{t+x+2}\right)(1+|u(t-1, x-2)|)} ; \text { if }(t, x) \in\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times[0,1], k=1, \ldots, m  \tag{3.10}\\
u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=  \tag{3.9}\\
u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+\frac{1}{\left(6 e^{t+x+4}\right)\left(1+\left|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right|\right)} ; x \in[0,1], k=1, \ldots, m  \tag{3.11}\\
u(t, x)=t+x^{2},(t, x) \in[-1,1] \times[-2,1] \backslash(0,1] \times(0,1]  \tag{3.12}\\
u(t, 0)=t, t \in[0,1], u(0, x)=x^{2}, x \in[0,1]
\end{gather*}
$$

Set

$$
\begin{gathered}
f(t, x, u)=\frac{1}{\left(10 e^{t+x+2}\right)(1+|u|)} ; \quad \text { if }(t, x) \in[0,1] \times[0,1] \\
I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)=\frac{1}{\left(6 e^{t+x+4}\right)\left(1+\left|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right|\right)} ; x \in[0,1] .
\end{gathered}
$$

For each $u, \bar{u} \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ and $(t, x) \in[0,1] \times[0,1]$ we have

$$
\left\|I_{k}(u)-I_{k}(v)\right\| \leq \frac{1}{6 e^{4}}\|u-v\|_{\widetilde{P C}}
$$

### 3.3. IMPULSIVE PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS WITH INFINITE DELAY35

Hence $\left(H_{3}\right)$ is satisfied with $l=\frac{1}{6 e^{4}}$. We shall show that condition (4.5) holds with $a=b=1$ and $m=1$. Indeed,

$$
2 m l=\frac{1}{3 e^{4}}<1
$$

which is satisfied for each $\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right) \in(0,1] \times(0,1]$. Consequently Theorem 3.3 implies that problem (3.9)-(3.12) has a solution defined on $[-1,1] \times[-2,1]$.

### 3.3 Impulsive Partial Differential Equations with Infinite Delay

### 3.3.1 Introduction

In this section, we shall be concerned with the existence of solutions for the following impulsive partial hyperbolic differential equations:

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(x, y)=f\left(x, y, u_{(x, y)}\right) ; \quad \text { if }(x, y) \in J_{k}, \quad k=0, \ldots, m,  \tag{3.13}\\
u\left(x_{k}^{+}, y\right)=u\left(x_{k}^{-}, y\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(x_{k}^{-}, y\right)\right), \quad \text { if } y \in[0, b], k=1, \ldots, m,  \tag{3.14}\\
u(x, y)=\phi(x, y) ; \text { if }(x, y) \in \tilde{J},  \tag{3.15}\\
u(x, 0)=\varphi(x), x \in[0, a], u(0, y)=\psi(y) ; y \in[0, b], \tag{3.16}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $J_{0}=\left[0, x_{1}\right] \times[0, b], J_{k}:=\left(x_{k}, x_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b] ; k=1, \ldots, m, z_{k}=\left(x_{k}, 0\right), k=$ $0, \ldots, m, a, b>0, J=[0, a] \times[0, b], \tilde{J}=(-\infty, a] \times(-\infty, b] \backslash(0, a] \times(0, b],{ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r}$ is the Caputo fractional derivative of order $r=\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right) \in(0,1] \times(0,1], \varphi:[0, a] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, $\psi:[0, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ are given continuous functions with $\varphi(x)=\phi(x, 0), \psi(y)=\phi(0, y)$ for each $(x, y) \in J, \quad 0=x_{0}<x_{1}<\cdots<x_{m}<x_{m+1}=a, f: J \times \mathcal{B} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, I_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow$ $\mathbb{R}^{n}, k=1, \ldots, m, \phi: \tilde{J} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, are given functions. $\mathcal{B}$ is called a phase space that will be specified in the next Section. If $u:(-\infty, a] \times(-\infty, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, then for any $(x, y) \in J$ define $u_{(x, y)}$ by

$$
u_{(x, y)}(s, t)=u(x+s, y+t), \text { for }(s, t) \in[-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0] .
$$

### 3.3.2 Existence Results

Our main result in this section is based upon the fixed point theorem due to Burton and Kirk. To define the solutions of problems (3.13)-(3.16), we shall consider the space

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Omega= & \left\{u:(-\infty, a] \times(-\infty, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}: u_{(x, y)} \in B \text { for }(x, y) \in E\right. \text { and there exist } \\
& u\left(x_{k}^{-}, .\right), u\left(x_{k}^{+}, .\right) \text {exist with } u\left(x_{k}^{-}, .\right)=u\left(x_{k}, .\right) ; k=1, \ldots, m, \text { and } \\
& \left.u \in C\left(J_{k}, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right) ; k=0, \ldots, m\right\},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $J_{k}=\left(x_{k}, x_{k+1}\right] \times(0, b]$
Let us define what we mean by a solution of problem (3.13)-(3.16).

Definition 3.4 A function $u \in \Omega$ is said to be a solution of (3.13)-(3.16) if $u$ satisfies $\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(x, y)=f(x, y, u(x, y))$ on $J^{\prime}$ and conditions (3.14), (3.15) and (3.16) are satisfied.

Let $h \in C\left(\left[x_{k}, x_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b], \mathbb{R}^{n}\right), z_{k}=\left(x_{k}, 0\right)$, and

$$
\mu_{k}(x, y)=u(x, 0)+u\left(x_{k}^{+}, y\right)-u\left(x_{k}^{+}, 0\right), \quad k=0, \ldots, m
$$

For the existence of solutions for the problem (3.13) - (3.16), we need the following lemma:
Lemma 3.5 A function $u \in C\left(\left[x_{k}, x_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b], \mathbb{R}^{n}\right) ; k=0, \ldots, m$ is a solution of the differential equation

$$
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(x, y)=h(x, y) ; \quad(x, y) \in\left[x_{k}, x_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b],
$$

if and only if $u(x, y)$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, y)=\mu_{k}(x, y)+\left(I_{z_{k}}^{r} h\right)(x, y) ;(x, y) \in\left[x_{k}, x_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b] \tag{3.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 3.6 [7] Let $0<r_{1}, r_{2} \leq 1$ and let $h: J \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ be continuous. A function $u$ is $a$ solution of the fractional integral equation
$u(x, y)= \begin{cases}\phi(x, y) & \text { if }(x, y) \in \tilde{J}, \\ \mu(x, y)+\sum_{0<x_{k}<x}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(x_{k}^{-}, y\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(x_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) & \text { if }(x, y) \in J, \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<x_{k}<x} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}\left(x_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, t) d t d s & k=1, \ldots, m, \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{x_{k}}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, t) d t d s & \end{cases}$
if and only if $u$ is a solution of the fractional initial value problem

$$
\begin{align*}
& { }^{c} D^{r} u(x, y)=h(x, y), \quad(x, y) \in J_{k}, \quad k=0, \ldots, m  \tag{3.19}\\
& u\left(x_{k}^{+}, y\right)=u\left(x_{k}^{-}, y\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(x_{k}^{-}, y\right)\right), \quad k=1, \ldots, m \tag{3.20}
\end{align*}
$$

Let us introduce the following hypotheses which are assumed hereafter.
(H1) The functions $I_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ are continuous.
(H2) There exist $p, q \in C\left(J, \mathbb{R}_{+}\right)$such that

$$
\|f(t, x, u)\| \leq p(t, x)+q(t, x)\|u\|_{\mathcal{B}}, \text { for }(t, x) \in J \text { and each } u \in \mathcal{B} .
$$

(H3) There exists $l>0$ such that

$$
\left\|I_{k}(u)-I_{k}(v)\right\| \leq l\|u-v\| \text { for each } u, v \in \mathbb{R}^{n} .
$$

### 3.3. IMPULSIVE PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS WITH INFINITE DELAY37

Theorem 3.7 Assume that hypotheses (H1)-(H3) hold. If

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 m l<1, \tag{3.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

then the IV P (3.13)-(3.16) has at least one solution on J.

Proof. We shall reduce the existence of solutions of (3.13)-(3.16) to a fixed point problem. Consider the operator $N: \Omega \longrightarrow \Omega$ defined by
$N(u)(x, y)= \begin{cases}\phi(x, y) & \text { if }(x, y) \in \tilde{J}, \\ \mu(x, y)+\sum_{0<x_{k}<x}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(x_{k}^{-}, y\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(x_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) & \text { if }(x, y) \in J, \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<x_{k}<x} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}\left(x_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, t) d t d s & k=1, \ldots, m, \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{x_{k}}^{\int_{0}} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, t) d t d s . & \end{cases}$
Consider the operators $A, B: \Omega \rightarrow \Omega$ defined by,

$$
A(u)(x, y)= \begin{cases}\phi(x, y), & (x, y) \in \tilde{J}, \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<x_{k}<x} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}\left(x_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} & k=1, \ldots, m \\ \times f(s, t, u(s, t)) d t d s & \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{x_{k}}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} & \\ \times f(s, t, u(s, t)) d t d s, & (x, y) \in J .\end{cases}
$$

and

$$
B(u)(x, y)= \begin{cases}0, & (x, y) \in \tilde{J} \\ \mu(x, y)+\sum_{0<x_{k}<x}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(x_{k}^{-}, y\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(x_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right), & (x, y) \in J\end{cases}
$$

Let $v(.,):.(-\infty, a] \times(-\infty, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ be a function defined by,

$$
v(x, y)= \begin{cases}\phi(x, y), & (x, y) \in \tilde{J} . \\ \mu(x, y), & (x, y) \in J .\end{cases}
$$

Then $v_{(x, y)}=\phi$ for all $(x, y) \in E$.
For each $w \in\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ with $w(x, y)=0$ for each $(x, y) \in E$, we denote by $\bar{w}$ the function defined by

$$
\bar{w}(t, x)= \begin{cases}0, & (x, y) \in \tilde{J} \\ w(x, y) & (x, y) \in J .\end{cases}
$$

If $u(.,$.$) satisfies the integral equation,$

$$
u(x, y)=\mu(x, y)+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, t, u_{(s, t)}\right) d t d s
$$

we can decompose $u(.,$.$) as u(x, y)=\bar{w}(x, y)+v(x, y) ;(x, y) \in\left(x_{k}, x_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b]$, which implies $u_{(x, y)}=\bar{w}_{(x, y)}+v_{(x, y)}$, for every $(x, y) \in J$ and the function $w(.,$.$) satisfies$

$$
\begin{aligned}
w(x, y) & =\sum_{0<x_{k}<x}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(x_{k}^{-}, y\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left({ }_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<x_{k}<x} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}\left(x_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, t, \bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right) d t d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{x_{k}}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(t-t)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, t, \bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right) d t d s .
\end{aligned}
$$

Set

$$
C_{0}=\{w \in \Omega: w(x, y)=0 \text { for }(x, y) \in E\}
$$

and let $\|.\|_{C_{0}}$ be the norm in $C_{0}$ defined by

$$
\|w\|_{C_{0}}=\sup _{(x, y) \in E}\left\|w_{(x, y)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}}+\sup _{(x, y) \in J}\|w(x, y)\|=\sup _{(x, y) \in J}\|w(x, y)\|, w \in C_{0} .
$$

$C_{0}$ is a Banach space with norm $\|\cdot\|_{C_{0}}$. Let the operators $A, B: C_{0} \rightarrow C_{0}$ defined by

$$
(A w)(x, y)= \begin{cases}\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<x_{k}<x} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}\left(x_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1}, & k=1, \ldots, m \\ \times f\left(s, t, \overline{w_{(s, t)}}+v_{(s, t)}\right) d t d s \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{x_{k}}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} & \\ \times f\left(s, t, \bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right) d t d s, & (x, y) \in J\end{cases}
$$

and

$$
(B w)(x, y)=\mu(x, y)+\sum_{0<x_{k}<x}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(x_{k}^{-}, y\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(x_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right),(x, y) \in J
$$

Then the problem of finding the solution of the $\operatorname{IVP}$ (3.13)-(3.16) is reduced to finding the solutions of the operator equation $A(w)+B(w)=w$. We shall show that the operators $A$ and $B$ satisfy the conditions of Theorem 3.7. The proof will be given by a couple of steps.

Step 1: $A$ is continuous.
Let $\left\{w_{n}\right\}$ be a sequence such that $w_{n} \rightarrow w$ in $C_{0}$, then for each $(x, y) \in J$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|A\left(w_{n}\right)(x, y)-A(w)(x, y)\right\| \\
& \leq \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}\left(x_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \times\left\|f\left(s, t, \bar{w}_{n(s, t)}+v_{n(s, t)}\right)-f\left(s, t, \bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right)\right\| d t d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{x_{k}}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \times\left\|f\left(s, t, \bar{w}_{n(s, t)}+v_{n(s, t)}\right)-f\left(s, t, \bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right)\right\| d t d s . \\
& \leq \frac{\left\|f\left(., ., \bar{w}_{n(., .)}+v_{n(., .)}\right)-f\left(., ., \bar{w}_{(. .,)}+v_{(., .)}\right)\right\|}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}\left(x_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} d t d s \\
& +\frac{\left\|f\left(., ., \bar{w}_{n(. . .)}+v_{n(. .,)}\right)-f\left(.,, \bar{w}_{(. .)}+v_{(., .)}\right)\right\|}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{x_{k}}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} d t d s .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $f$ is continuous function, we have

$$
\left\|A\left(w_{n}\right)-A(w)\right\|_{C_{0}} \leq \frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\left\|f\left(., ., w_{n(., .)}\right)-f\left(., ., w_{(., .)}\right)\right\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \rightarrow 0 \text { as } n \rightarrow \infty
$$

Thus $A$ is continuous.
Step 2: $A$ maps bounded sets into bounded sets in $C_{0}$.
Indeed, it is enough show that for any $\eta^{*}$, there exists a positive constant $l$ such that, for each $w \in B_{\eta^{*}}=\left\{w \in C_{0}:\|w\|_{(a, b)} \leq \eta^{*}\right\}$ we have $\|A(w)\|_{\infty} \leq l$
By (H2) we have for each $(x, y) \in\left(x_{k}, x_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b]$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|A(w)(x, y)\| & \leq \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}\left(x_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, t, \bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right)\right\| d t d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{x_{k}}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, t, \bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right)\right\| d t d s \\
& \leq \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}\left(x_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} d t d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{x_{k}}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} d t d s
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\|A(w)\|_{B} \leq \frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\left(\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}\right)}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}:=l
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}} & \leq\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, t)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}}+\left\|v_{(s, t)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}} \\
& \leq K \eta^{*}+K\|\phi(0,0)\|+M\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}:=\eta .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence $\|A(w)\|_{C_{0}} \leq l$.

Step 3: $A$ maps bounded sets into equicontinuous sets in $C_{0}$.
Let $\left(x_{1}, y_{1}\right),\left(x_{2}, y_{2}\right) \in(0, a] \times(0, b], x_{1}<x_{2}, y_{1}<y_{2}, B_{\eta^{*}}$ be a bounded set as in Step 2.

### 3.3. IMPULSIVE PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS WITH INFINITE DELAY41

Let $w \in B_{\eta^{*}}$, then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|A(w)\left(x_{2}, y_{2}\right)-A(w)\left(x_{1}, y_{1}\right)\right\| \\
& \leq \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y_{1}}\left(x_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left[\left(y_{2}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(y_{1}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] \\
& \times f\left(s, t, \bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right) d t d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{y_{1}}^{y_{2}}\left(x_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(y_{2}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, t, \bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right)\right\| d t d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{x_{1}} \int_{0}^{y_{1}}\left[\left(x_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(y_{2}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(x_{1}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(y_{1}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] \\
& \times f\left(s, t, \bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right) d t d x \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}} \int_{y_{1}}^{y_{2}}\left(x_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(y_{2}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, t, \bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right)\right\| d t d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{x_{1}} \int_{y_{1}}^{y_{2}}\left(x_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(y_{2}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, t, \bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right)\right\| d t d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}} \int_{0}^{y_{1}}\left(x_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(y_{2}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, t, \bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right)\right\| d t d s \\
& \leq \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y_{1}}\left(x_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left[\left(y_{2}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(y_{1}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] d t d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{y_{1}}^{y_{2}}\left(x_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(y_{2}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1} d t d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{x_{1}} \int_{0}^{y_{1}}\left[\left(x_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(y_{2}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(x_{1}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(y_{1}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] d t d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}} \int_{y_{1}}^{y_{2}}\left(x_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(y_{2}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1} d t d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{x_{1}} \int_{y_{1}}^{y_{2}}\left(x_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(y_{2}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1} d t d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}} \int_{0}^{y_{1}}\left(x_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(y_{2}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1} d t d s \\
& \leq \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y_{1}}\left(x_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left[\left(y_{2}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(y_{1}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] d t d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{y_{1}}^{y_{2}}\left(x_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(y_{2}-t\right)^{r_{2}-1} d t d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\left[2 y_{2}^{r_{2}}\left(x_{2}-x_{1}\right)^{r_{1}}+2 x_{2}^{r_{1}}\left(y_{2}-y_{1}\right)^{r_{2}}\right. \\
& \left.+x_{1}^{r_{1}} y_{1}^{r_{2}}-x_{2}^{r_{1}} y_{2}^{r_{2}}-2\left(x_{2}-x_{1}\right)^{r_{1}}\left(y_{2}-y_{1}\right)^{r_{2}}\right] \text {. }
\end{aligned}
$$

As $x_{1} \rightarrow x_{2}, y_{1} \rightarrow y_{2}$ the right-hand side of the above inequality tends to zero.
As a consequence of Steps 1 to 3, together with the Arzela-Ascoli theorem, we can conclude that $A: C_{0} \rightarrow C_{0}$ is continuous and completely continuous.

Step 4: $B$ is a contraction.
Let $w, w^{*} \in C_{0}$, then we have for each $(x, y) \in J$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|B(w)(x, y)-B\left(w^{*}\right)(x, y)\right\| \\
& \leq \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|I_{k}\left(w\left(x_{k}^{-}, y\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(w^{*}\left(x_{k}^{-}, y\right)\right)\right\|+\left\|I_{k}\left(w\left(x_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(w^{*}\left(x_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right\|\right) \\
& \leq \sum_{k=1}^{m} l\left(\left\|w-w^{*}\right\|_{C_{0}}+\left\|w-w^{*}\right\|_{C_{0}}\right) \\
& \leq 2 m l\left\|w-w^{*}\right\|_{C_{0}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\left\|B(w)-B\left(w^{*}\right)\right\|_{C_{0}} \leq 2 m l\left\|w-w^{*}\right\|_{C_{0}}
$$

Hence by (3.21), $B$ is a contraction.

## Step 5: (A priori bounds)

Now it remains to show that the set

$$
\mathcal{E}=\left\{w \in C_{0}: w=\lambda B\left(\frac{w}{\lambda}\right)+\lambda A(w), \text { for some } \lambda \in(0,1)\right\}
$$

is bounded. Let $w \in \mathcal{E}$, then $w=\lambda B\left(\frac{w}{\lambda}\right)+\lambda A(w)$. Thus, for each $(x, y) \in J$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
w(x, y) & \left.=\lambda \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\| I_{k} \frac{\left(u\left(x_{k}^{-}, y\right)\right)}{\lambda}\right)\|+\| I_{k} \frac{\left(u\left(x_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)}{\lambda} \|\right) \\
& +\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, t, \bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right) d t d s \\
& +\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{x_{k}}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, t, \bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right) d t d s
\end{aligned}
$$

This implies by $(H 2)$ and $(H 3)$ that, for each $(x, y) \in J$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|w(x, y)\| & \leq \sum_{k=1}^{m} \lambda\left(\left\|I_{k} \frac{u\left(x_{k}^{-}, y\right)}{\lambda}\right\|-\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\|+\left\|I_{k} \frac{u\left(x_{k}^{-}, 0\right)}{\lambda}\right\|-\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\|\right) \\
& +2 \lambda \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\|+\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \times\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right\|_{B} d t d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} d t d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right\|_{B} d t d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} d t d s \\
& \leq l \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*} \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right\|_{B} d t d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} d t d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right\|_{B} d t d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-t)^{r_{2}-1} d t d s,
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
I^{*}=\sum_{k=1}^{m}\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\| .
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}} \leq & \left\|\bar{w}_{(s, t)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}}+\left\|v_{(s, t)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}} \\
\leq & K \sup \{w(\tilde{s}, \tilde{t}):(\tilde{s}, \tilde{t}) \in[0, s] \times[0, t]\} \\
& +M\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}+K\|\phi(0,0)\| . \tag{3.22}
\end{align*}
$$

If we name $\gamma(s, t)$ the right hand side of (3.22), then we have

$$
\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, t)}+v_{(s, t)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}} \leq \gamma(x, y)
$$

## 44CHAPTER 3. FRACTIONAL IMPULSIVE PARTIAL FUNCTIONAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIC

and therefore, for $\gamma(x, y) \in J$ we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
\|w(x, y)\| \leq & l \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(x_{k}^{-}, y\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(x_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \\
+ & \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\left(\sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right. \\
& \left.\quad+\int_{0}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right) \tag{3.23}
\end{align*}
$$

Using the above inequality and the definition of $\gamma$ for each $(x, y) \in J$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\gamma(x, y) & \leq M\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}+K\|\phi(0,0)\|+l \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(x_{k}^{-}, y\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(x_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*} \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\left(\sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right. \\
& \left.+\int_{0}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right)+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \\
& \leq M\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}+K\|\phi(0,0)\|+2 m l \gamma(x, y)+2 I^{*} \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\left(\sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right. \\
& \left.+\int_{0}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right)+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{aligned}
\gamma(x, y)(1-2 m l) & \leq M\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}+K\|\phi(0,0)\|+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\left(\sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right. \\
& \left.+\int_{0}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\gamma(x, y) & \leq\left(\frac{1}{1-2 m l}\right) \times\left(M\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}+K\|\phi(0,0)\|+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\right. \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\left(\sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{x_{k-1}}^{x_{k}} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right. \\
& \left.\left.+\int_{0}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

### 3.3. IMPULSIVE PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS WITH INFINITE DELAY45

If $\left(x^{*}, y^{*}\right) \in \tilde{J}$, then $\gamma(x, y)=\|\phi\|_{C}$ and the previous inequality holds. If $(x, y) \in J$, by Lemma 1.4 implies that there exists $\tilde{k}=\tilde{k}\left(r_{2}, r_{2}\right)$ such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\gamma(x, y) & \leq\left(\frac{1}{1-2 m l}\right) \times\left(M\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}+K\|\phi(0,0)\|+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\right) \\
& \times\left(1+\tilde{k} \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{2}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{x} \int_{0}^{y}(x-s)^{r_{1}-1}(y-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\gamma(x, y) & \leq\left(\frac{1}{1-2 m l}\right) \times\left(M\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}+K\|\phi(0,0)\|+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\right) \\
& \times\left(1+\tilde{k} \frac{a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\right):=\tilde{R} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since for every $(x, y) \in J,\left\|w_{(x, y))}\right\|_{\infty} \leq \gamma(x, y)$.
This shows that the set $\mathcal{E}$ is bounded. As a consequence of Theorem 3.7 we deduce that $A+B$ has a fixed point which is a solution of problem (3.13)-(3.16).

### 3.3.3 An Example

In this section we give an example as an application of our results. We consider the following impulsive partial hyperbolic functional differential equations of the form

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(x, y)=\frac{e^{-x-y}}{9+e^{x+y}} \frac{|u(x, y)|}{(1+|u(x, y)|)},(x, y) \in J=\left[0, \frac{1}{2}\right] \times[0,1] \cup\left(\frac{1}{2}, 1\right] \times[0,1],  \tag{3.24}\\
u\left(\frac{1}{2}^{+}, y\right)=u\left(\frac{1}{2}^{-}, y\right)+\frac{\left|u\left(\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)^{-}, y\right)\right|}{\frac{1}{4}+\left|u\left(\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)^{-}, y\right)\right|}, \text { if } y \in[0,1],  \tag{3.25}\\
u(x, y)=x+y^{2}, \text { if }(x, y) \in[-1,1] \times[-2,1] \backslash(0,1] \times(0,1],  \tag{3.26}\\
u(x, 0)=x, u(0, y)=y^{2}, x \in[0,1], y \in[0,1] . \tag{3.27}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $z_{0}=(0,0), z_{1}=\left(\frac{1}{2}, 0\right)$. Let $\gamma \in \mathbb{R}$, and $C_{\gamma}$ be the set of all piece-wise continuous functions $\phi:(-\infty, 0] \times(-\infty, 0] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ for which a limit $\lim _{\|(s, t)\| \rightarrow \infty} e^{\gamma(s+t)} \phi(s, t)$ exists, with the norm

$$
\|\phi\|_{C_{\gamma}}=\sup _{(s, t) \in(-\infty, 0] \times(-\infty, 0]} e^{\gamma(s+t)}\|\phi(s, t)\|
$$

Set

$$
f(x, y, \varphi)=\frac{e^{-x-y}|\varphi|}{\left(9+e^{x+y}\right)(1+|\varphi|)},(x, y) \in[0,1] \times[0,1], \varphi \in C,
$$

and

$$
I_{1}(u)=\frac{|u|}{\frac{1}{4}+|u|}, u \in \mathbb{R}_{+} .
$$

It is clear that the functions $f$ and $I_{1}$ are continuous, and for $(x, y) \in[0,1] \times[0,1]$ and $\varphi \in C$, we have

$$
f(x, y, \varphi)=\frac{e^{-x-y}}{9+e^{x+y}}(2+|\varphi|)
$$

Hence ( $H 2$ )is satisfied with

$$
p(x, y)=\frac{2 e^{-x-y}}{9+e^{x+y}} \text { and } q(x, y)=\frac{e^{-x-y}}{9+e^{x+y}}
$$

Also, for $u_{1}, u_{2} \in \mathbb{R}$, we have

$$
\left|I\left(u_{1}\right)-I\left(u_{2}\right)\right|=\left|\frac{\left|u_{1}\right|}{\frac{1}{4}+\left|u_{1}\right|}-\frac{\left|u_{2}\right|}{\frac{1}{4}+\left|u_{2}\right|}\right| \leq \frac{1}{4}\left|u_{1}-u_{2}\right|
$$

Thus (H3) is satisfied with $l=\frac{1}{4}$. Finally conditions of Theorem 3.7 are satisfied, which implies that problem (3.13)-(3.16) has at least one solution defined on $(-\infty, 1] \times(-\infty, 1]$

## Chapter 4

## Impulsive Partial Hyperbolic Functional Differential Equations of Fractional Order with State Dependent Delay

### 4.1 Introduction

In this chapter, we shall be concerned to the existence of solutions for impulsive hyperbolic differential equations of fractional order with state dependent delay.

### 4.2 Impulsive Partial Differential Equations with Finite Delay

### 4.2.1 Introduction

In this section, we shall be concerned with the existence of solutions for the following impulsive partial hyperbolic differential equations:

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=f\left(t, x, u_{\left.\left(\rho_{1}\left(t, x, u_{(t, x)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(t, x, u_{(t, x)}\right)\right)\right)}\right) \quad \text { if }(t, x) \in J_{k}, k=0, \ldots, m, t \neq t_{k},  \tag{4.1}\\
u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \quad \text { if } x \in[0, b], k=1, \ldots, m,  \tag{4.2}\\
u(t, x)=\phi(t, x) ; \text { if }(t, x) \in \tilde{J}:=[-\alpha, a] \times[-\beta, b] \backslash(0, a] \times(0, b],  \tag{4.3}\\
u(t, 0)=\varphi(t), t \in[0, a], u(0, x)=\psi(x) ; x \in[0, b], \tag{4.4}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $J=[0, a] \times[0, b], a, b, \alpha, \beta>0,0=t_{0}<t_{1}<\cdots<t_{m}<t_{m+1}=a,{ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r}$ is the Caputo fractional derivative of order $r=\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right) \in(0,1] \times(0,1], \varphi:[0, a] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, $\psi:[0, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ are given continuous functions with $\varphi(t)=\phi(t, 0), \psi(x)=\phi(0, x)$ for each
$(t, x) \in J, f: J \times C \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, \rho_{1}, \rho_{2}: J \times C \rightarrow \mathbb{R}, I_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, k=1, \ldots, m, \phi: \tilde{J} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, are given functions and $C$ is the Banach space defined by
$C=C_{(\alpha, \beta)}=\left\{u:[-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}:\right.$ continuous and there exist $\tau_{k} \in(-\alpha, 0)$ with $u\left(\tau_{k}^{-}, \tilde{x}\right)$ and $u\left(t_{k}^{+}, \tilde{x}\right), k=1, \ldots, m$, exist for any $\tilde{y} \in[-\beta, 0]$ with $\left.u\left(\tau_{k}^{-}, \tilde{x}\right)=u\left(\tau_{k}, \tilde{x}\right)\right\}$.

This set is a Banach space with the norm

$$
\|u\|_{C}=\sup _{(t, x) \in[-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0]}\|u(t, x)\|
$$

### 4.2.2 Existence Results

Set $J_{k}=\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times(0, b]$. Consider the Banach space

$$
\begin{aligned}
P C & :=P C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right) \\
& =\left\{u: J \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}: u \in C\left(J_{k}, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right) ; k=1, \ldots, m, \text { and there exist } u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right. \text { and } \\
& \left.u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right) ; k=1, \ldots, m, \text { with } u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}, x\right)\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

with the norm

$$
\|u\|_{P C}=\sup _{(t, x) \in J}\|u(t, x)\|
$$

Set
$\widetilde{P C}:=P C\left([-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0], \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$, which is a Banach space with the norm

$$
\|u\|_{\widetilde{P C}}=\sup \{\|u(t, x)\|:(t, x) \in[-\alpha, a] \times[-\beta, b]\}
$$

Definition 4.1 A function $u \in \widetilde{P C}$ such that its mixed derivative $D_{t x}^{2}$ exists on $J^{\prime}$ is said to be a solution of (5.1)-(5.4) if $u$ satisfies the condition (5.3) on $\tilde{J}$, the equation (5.1) on $J^{\prime}$ and conditions (5.2) and (5.4) are satisfied on $J$.

Set $\mathcal{R}:=\mathcal{R}_{\left(\rho_{1}^{-}, \rho_{2}^{-}\right)}$

$$
=\left\{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u), \rho_{2}(s, y, u)\right):(s, y, u) \in J \times C, \rho_{i}(s, y, u) \leq 0 ; i=1,2\right\}
$$

We always assume that $\rho_{i}: J \times C \longrightarrow \mathbb{R} ; i=1,2$ are continuous and the function $(s, y) \longmapsto u_{(s, y)}$ is continuous from $\mathcal{R}$ into $C$.
Our first existence result for the $I V P(5.1)$-(5.4) is based upon the fixed point theorem due to Burton and Kirk.
Let us introduce the following hypotheses which are assumed after.
(H1) The functions $I_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ are continuous.
(H2) There exist $p, q \in C\left(J, \mathbb{R}_{+}\right)$such that

$$
\|f(t, x, u)\| \leq p(t, x)+q(t, x)\|u\|_{C}, \text { for }(t, x) \in J \text { and each } u \in C .
$$

### 4.2. IMPULSIVE PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS WITH FINITE DELAY49

(H3) There exists $l>0$ such that

$$
\left\|I_{k}(u)-I_{k}(v)\right\| \leq l\|u-v\| \text { for each } u, v \in \mathbb{R}^{n} .
$$

Theorem 4.2 Assume that hypotheses (H1)-(H3) hold. If

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 m l<1, \tag{4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

then the IVP (5.1)-(5.4) has at least one solution on $[-\alpha, a] \times[-\beta, b]$.
Proof. We shall reduce the existence of solutions of (5.1)-(5.4) to a fixed point problem. Consider the operator $N: \widetilde{P C} \longrightarrow \widetilde{P C}$ defined by

$$
N(u)(t, x)= \begin{cases}\phi(t, x) & \text { if }(t, x) \in \tilde{J} \\ \mu(t, x)+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) & \text { if }(t, x) \in J \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} & k=1, \ldots, m \\ \times f\left(s, y, u_{\left.\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right) d y d s}\right. \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} \\ \times f\left(s, y, u_{\left.\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u(s, y)), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right) d y d s}\right. & \\ \times 10\end{cases}
$$

Consider the operators $F, G: \widetilde{P C} \rightarrow \widetilde{P C}$ defined by,

$$
G(u)(t, x)= \begin{cases}\phi(t, x), & (t, x) \in \tilde{J}, \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<t_{k}<t x} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} & k=1, \ldots, m \\ \left.\times f\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u(s, y)\right.}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right) d y d s & \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} & \\ \times f\left(s, y, u_{\left.\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right) d y d s,} \quad(t, x) \in J .\right.\end{cases}
$$

and

$$
F(u)(t, x)= \begin{cases}0, & (t, x) \in \tilde{J} \\ \mu(t, x)+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right), & (t, x) \in J\end{cases}
$$

Then the problem of finding the solution of the $I V P(5.1)-(5.3)$ is reduced to finding the solutions of the operator equation $F(u)+G(u)=u$. We shall show that the operators $F$ and $G$ satisfy the conditions of Theorem 4.2. The proof will be given by several steps.

Step 1: $G$ is continuous. Let $\left\{u_{n}\right\}$ be a sequence such that $u_{n} \rightarrow u$ in $\widetilde{P C}$, then for each $(t, x) \in J$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|G\left(u_{n}\right)(t, x)-G(u)(t, x)\right\| \\
& \leq \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} \| f\left(s, y, u_{n\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, y, u u_{(s, y)}\right), \rho_{2}(s, y, u(s, y))\right)}\right) \\
& -f\left(s, y, u_{\left.\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, y, u u_{(s, y)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right)}\right) \| d y d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} \| f\left(s, y, u_{\left.n\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right)}\right) \\
& -f\left(s, y, u_{\left.\left.\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, y, u u_{(s, y)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right)\right) \| d y d s .}^{m}\right. \\
& \leq \frac{\left\|f\left(., ., u_{n(. . .)}\right)-f\left(., ., u_{(., .)}\right)\right\|}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s \\
& +\frac{\left\|f\left(., ., u_{n(.,)}\right)-f\left(.,, u_{(. .,)}\right)\right\|}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $f$ is continuous function, we have

$$
\left\|G\left(u_{n}\right)-G(u)\right\|_{\infty} \leq \frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\left\|f\left(., ., u_{n(., .)}\right)-f\left(., ., u_{(., .)}\right)\right\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \rightarrow 0 \text { as } n \rightarrow \infty
$$

Thus $G$ is continuous.
Step 2: $G$ maps bounded sets into bounded sets in $\widetilde{P C}$. Indeed, it is enough show that for any $\eta^{*}$, there exists a positive constant $l$ such that, for each $u \in B_{\eta^{*}}=\{u \in \widetilde{P C}$ : $\left.\|u\|_{\infty} \leq \eta^{*}\right\}$ we have $\|G(u)\|_{\widetilde{P C}} \leq l$
By (H2) we have for each $(t, x) \in J$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \|G(u)(t, x)\| \\
& \left.\left.\leq \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} \| f\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}(s, y, u(s, y))\right)\right) \| d y d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, y, u_{\left.\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, y, u u_{(s, y)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right)}\right)\right\| d y d s \\
& \leq \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\|G(u)\|_{\widetilde{P C}} \leq \frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\left(\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}\right)}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}:=l^{*}
$$

### 4.2. IMPULSIVE PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS WITH FINITE DELAY51

Hence $\|G(u)\|_{\widetilde{P C}} \leq l^{*}$.
Step 3: $G$ maps bounded sets into equicontinuous sets in $\widetilde{P C}$.
Let $\left(t_{1}, x_{1}\right),\left(t_{2}, x_{2}\right) \in(0, a] \times(0, b], t_{1}<t_{2}, x_{1}<x_{2}, B_{\eta}$ be a bounded set as in step 2, let $u \in B_{\eta^{*}}$ be a bounded set of $\widetilde{P C}$ as in Step 2. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|G(u)\left(t_{2}, x_{2}\right)-G(u)\left(t_{1}, x_{1}\right)\right\| \\
& \leq \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left[\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(x_{1}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] \\
& \times f\left(s, \tau, u_{\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right)}\right) d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, \tau, u_{\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right)}\right)\right\| d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left[\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(t_{1}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{1}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] \\
& \times f\left(s, \tau, u_{\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right)}\right) d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, \tau, u_{\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right)}\right)\right\| d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, \tau, u_{\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right)}\right)\right\| d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, \tau, u_{\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right)}\right)\right\| d \tau d s \\
& \leq \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left[\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(x_{1}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left[\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(t_{1}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{1}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& \leq \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left[\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(x_{1}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-\tau\right)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\left[2 x_{2}^{r_{2}}\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right)^{r_{1}}+2 t_{2}^{r_{1}}\left(x_{2}-x_{1}\right)^{r_{2}}\right. \\
& \left.+t_{1}^{r_{1}} x_{1}^{r_{2}}-t_{2}^{r_{1}} x_{2}^{r_{2}}-2\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right)^{r_{1}}\left(x_{2}-x_{1}\right)^{r_{2}}\right] .
\end{aligned}
$$

### 4.2. IMPULSIVE PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS WITH FINITE DELAY53

As $t_{1} \rightarrow t_{2}, x_{1} \rightarrow x_{2}$ the right-hand side of the above inequality tends to zero.
As a consequence of Steps 1 to 3, together with the Arzela-Ascoli theorem, we can conclude that $G: \widetilde{P C} \rightarrow \widetilde{P C}$ is continuous and completely continuous.

Step 4: $F$ is a contraction.
Let $u, v \in \widetilde{P C}$, then we have for each $(t, x) \in J$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \|F(u)(t, x)-F(v)(t, x)\| \\
& \leq \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(v\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)\right\|+\left\|I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(v\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right\|\right) \\
& \leq \sum_{k=1}^{m} l(\|u-v\|+\|u-v\|) \\
& \leq 2 m l\|u-v\|
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\|F(u)-F(v)\| \leq 2 m l\|u-v\| .
$$

Hence by (4.5), $F$ is a contraction.

## Step 5: (A priori bounds)

Now it remains to show that the set

$$
\mathcal{E}=\left\{u \in \widetilde{P C}: u=\lambda F\left(\frac{u}{\lambda}\right)+\lambda G(u) \text { for some } \lambda \in(0,1)\right\}
$$

is bounded. Let $u \in \mathcal{E}$, then $u=\lambda F\left(\frac{u}{\lambda}\right)+\lambda G(u)$. Thus, for each $(t, x) \in J$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
u(t, x) & \left.=\lambda \mu(t, x)+\sum_{k=1}^{m} \lambda\left(\| I_{k} \frac{\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)}{\lambda}\right)\|+\| I_{k} \frac{\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)}{\lambda} \|\right) \\
& +\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, \tau, u_{\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, \tau, u u_{s, \tau)}\right)\right)}\right) d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, \tau, u_{\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right)}\right) d \tau d s
\end{aligned}
$$

This implies by $(H 2)$ and $(H 3)$ that, for each $(t, x) \in J$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \|u(t, x)\| \\
& \leq\|\mu(t, x)\|+\sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|I_{k} u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|-\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\|+\left\|I_{k} u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|-\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\|\right)+2 \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\| \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|u_{\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right)}\right\|_{C} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|u_{\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right), \rho_{2}(s, \tau, u(s, \tau))\right)}\right\|_{C} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& \leq\|\mu(t, x)\|+l \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*} \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|u_{\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right), \rho_{2}(s, \tau, u(s, \tau))\right)}\right\|_{C} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s \\
& \left.+\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \| u_{\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, \tau, u u_{(s, \tau)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right)}\right) \|_{C} d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s,
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
I^{*}=\sum_{k=1}^{m}\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\| .
$$

We consider the function $\gamma$ defined by

$$
\gamma(t, x)=\sup \{|u(s, \tau)|:-\alpha \leq s \leq t,-\beta \leq \tau \leq x, 0 \leq t \leq a, 0 \leq x \leq b\}
$$

### 4.2. IMPULSIVE PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS WITH FINITE DELAY55

Let $\left(t^{*}, x^{*}\right) \in[-\alpha, t] \times[-\beta, x]$ be such that $\gamma(t, x)=\left|u\left(t^{*}, x^{*}\right)\right|$. If $\left(t^{*}, x^{*}\right) \in J$, then by the previous inequality, we have for $(t, x) \in J$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\gamma(t, x) & \leq\|\mu(t, x)\|+l \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*} \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\left(\sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right. \\
& \left.+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right)+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}
\end{aligned}
$$

Since for every $(t, x) \in J,\left\|u_{(t, x))}\right\|_{C} \leq \gamma(t, x)$ This shows that the set $\mathcal{E}$ is bounded. As a consequence of Theorem 4.2 we deduce that $F+G$ has a fixed point $u$ which is a solution of problem (5.1)-(5.3)

### 4.2.3 An Example

As an application of our results we consider the following impulsive fractional order partial hyperbolic functional differential equations with finite delay of the form

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{0}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=\frac{e^{-t-x}}{9+e^{t+x}} \\
\times \frac{\left|u\left(t-\sigma_{1}(u(t, x)), x-\sigma_{2}(u(t, x))\right)\right|}{1+\left|u\left(t-\sigma_{1}(u(t, x)), x-\sigma_{2}(u(t, x))\right)\right|}, \quad \text { if }(t, x) \in[0,1] \times[0,1], t \neq \frac{1}{2}  \tag{4.6}\\
u\left(\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)^{+}, x\right)=u\left(\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)^{-}, x\right)+\frac{\left|u\left(\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)^{-}, x\right)\right|}{3+\left|u\left(\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)^{-}, x\right)\right|}, x \in[0,1],  \tag{4.7}\\
u(t, x)=t+x^{2},(t, x) \in[-1,1] \times[-2,1] \backslash(0,1] \times(0,1],  \tag{4.8}\\
u(t, 0)=t, u(0, x)=x^{2}, \quad(t, x) \in[0,1] \times[0,1], \tag{4.9}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $\sigma_{1} \in C(\mathbb{R},[0,1])$, $\sigma_{2} \in C(\mathbb{R},[0,2])$.

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\rho_{1}(t, x, \varphi)=t-\sigma_{1}(\varphi(0,0)), & (t, x, \varphi) \in J \times C, \\
\rho_{2}(t, x, \varphi)=x-\sigma_{2}(\varphi(0,0)), & (t, x, \varphi) \in J \times C,
\end{array}
$$

where $C:=C_{(1,2)}$. Set

$$
f(t, x, \varphi)=\frac{e^{-t-x}|\varphi|}{\left(9+e^{t+x}\right)(1+|\varphi|)}, \quad(t, x) \in[0,1] \times[0,1], \varphi \in C
$$

and

$$
I_{k}(u)=\frac{u}{3+u}, u \in \mathbb{R}
$$

A simple computations show that conditions of Theorem 4.2 are satisfied which implies that problem (5.10)-(5.13) has a unique solution defined on $[-1,1] \times[-2,1]$

### 4.3 Impulsive Partial Differential Equations with Infinite Delay

### 4.3.1 Introduction

Next we consider the following system of partial hyperbolic differential equation of fractionnal order with infinite delay

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=f\left(t, x, u_{\left(\rho_{1}\left(t, x, u_{(t, x)}\right), \rho_{2}(t, x, u(t, x))\right)}\right) ; \quad \text { if }(t, x) \in J_{k}, k=0, \ldots, m ;  \tag{4.10}\\
u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \quad \text { if } x \in[0, b], k=1, \ldots, m,  \tag{4.11}\\
u(t, x)=\phi(t, x) ; \text { if }(t, x) \in \tilde{J}^{\prime}:=(-\infty, a] \times(-\infty, b] \backslash(0, a] \times(0, b],  \tag{4.12}\\
u(t, 0)=\varphi(t), t \in[0, a], u(0, x)=\psi(x) ; x \in[0, b], \tag{4.13}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $\varphi, \psi, I_{k}$ are as in problem (5.1)-(5.4), $f: J \times \mathcal{B} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, \rho_{1}, \rho_{2}: J \times \mathcal{B} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}, \phi: \tilde{J}^{\prime} \rightarrow$ $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ and $\mathcal{B}$ is a phase space.

### 4.3.2 Existence Results

Let the space

$$
\Omega:=\left\{u:(-\infty, a] \times(-\infty, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}: u_{(t, x)} \in \mathcal{B} \text { for }(t, x) \in E \text { and }\left.u\right|_{J} \in P C\right\}
$$

Definition 4.3 A function $u \in \Omega$ such that its mixed derivative $D_{t x}^{2}$ exists on $J$ is said to be a solution of (4.10)-(4.13) if $u$ satisfies the condition (4.12) on $\tilde{J}$, the equation (4.10) on $J$ and conditions (4.13) and (4.13) are satisfied on $J$.

Set $\mathcal{R}^{\prime}:=\mathcal{R}_{\left(\rho_{1}^{-}, \rho_{2}^{-}\right)}^{\prime}$

$$
=\left\{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u), \rho_{2}(s, y, u)\right):(s, y, u) \in J \times \mathcal{B}, \rho_{i}(s, y, u) \leq 0 ; i=1,2\right\}
$$

We always assume that $\rho_{i}: J \times \mathcal{B} \longrightarrow \mathbb{R} ; i=1,2$ are continuous and the function $(s, y) \longmapsto u_{(s, y)}$ is continuous from $\mathcal{R}^{\prime}$ into $\mathcal{B}$. We will need to introduce the following hypothesis:
$\left(H_{\phi}\right)$ There exists a continuous bounded function $L: \mathcal{R}_{\left(\rho_{1}^{-}, \rho_{1}^{-}\right)}^{\prime} \longrightarrow(0, \infty)$ such that

$$
\left\|\phi_{(s, y)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}} \leq L(s, y)\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}, \quad \text { for any }(s, y) \in \mathcal{R}^{\prime}
$$

In the sequel we will make use of the following generalization of a consequence of the phase space axioms.

### 4.3. IMPULSIVE PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS WITH INFINITE DELAY57

Lemma 4.4 If $u \in \Omega$, then

$$
\left\|u_{(s, y)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}}=\left(M+L^{\prime}\right)\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}+K \sup _{(\theta, \eta) \in[0, \max \{0, s\}] \times[0, \max \{0, y\}]}\|u(\theta, \eta)\|
$$

where

$$
L^{\prime}=\sup _{(s, y) \in \mathcal{R}^{\prime}} L(s, y)
$$

Our main result for the $I V P(4.10)-(4.13)$ is based upon the fixed point theorem due to Burton and Kirk. Let us introduce the following hypotheses which are assumed hereafter.
(H1) The functions $I_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ are continuous.
(H2) There exist $p, q \in C\left(J, \mathbb{R}_{+}\right)$such that

$$
\|f(t, x, u)\| \leq p(t, x)+q(t, x)\|u\|_{\mathcal{B}}, \text { for }(t, x) \in J \text { and each } u \in \mathcal{B} .
$$

(H3) There exists $l>0$ such that

$$
\left\|I_{k}(u)-I_{k}(v)\right\| \leq l\|u-v\| \text { for each } u, v \in \mathbb{R}^{n} .
$$

Theorem 4.5 Assume that hypotheses (H1)-(H3) hold. If

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 m l<1, \tag{4.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

then the IVP (4.10)-(4.13) has at least one solution on $(-\infty, a] \times(-\infty, b]$.
Proof. We shall reduce the existence of solutions of (5.1)-(5.4) to a fixed point problem. Consider the operator $N: \Omega \longrightarrow \Omega$ defined by

$$
N(u)(t, x)= \begin{cases}\phi(t, x) & \text { if }(t, x) \in \tilde{J} \\ \mu(t, x)+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) & \text { if }(t, x) \in J \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} & k=1, \ldots, m \\ \times f\left(s, y, u_{\left.\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right) d y d s}\right. \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1} \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)\right.} \int_{t_{k} t}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} & \\ f\left(s, y, u_{\left.\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right) d y d s .}\right.\end{cases}
$$

Consider the operators $A, B: \Omega \rightarrow \Omega$ defined by,

$$
A(u)(t, x)= \begin{cases}\phi(t, x), & (t, x) \in \tilde{J} \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} & k=1, \ldots, m \\ \times f\left(s, y, u_{\left.\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, y, u_{s, y y}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right) d y d s}\right. \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} & \\ \times f\left(s, y, u_{\left.\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right) d y d s,} \quad(t, x) \in J\right.\end{cases}
$$

58CHAPTER 4. FRACTIONAL IMPULSIVE PARTIAL FUNCTIONAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIC
and

$$
B(u)(t, x)= \begin{cases}0, & (t, x) \in \tilde{J} \\ \mu(t, x)+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right), & (t, x) \in J\end{cases}
$$

Let $v(.,):.(-\infty, a] \times(-\infty, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ be a function defined by,

$$
v(t, x)= \begin{cases}\phi(t, x), & (t, x) \in \tilde{J} \\ \mu(t, x), & (t, x) \in J\end{cases}
$$

Then $v_{(t, x)}=\phi$ for all $(t, x) \in E$.
For each $w \in\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ with $w(t, x)=0$ for each $(t, x) \in E$, we denote by $\bar{w}$ the function defined by

$$
\bar{w}(t, x)= \begin{cases}0, & (t, x) \in \tilde{J} \\ w(t, x) & (t, x) \in J\end{cases}
$$

If $u(.,$.$) satisfies the integral equation,$
$u(t, x)=\mu(t, x)+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, y, u_{\left.\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right)}\right) d y d s$
we can decompose $u(.,$.$) as u(t, x)=\bar{w}(t, x)+v(t, x) ; \quad(t, x) \in\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b]$, which implies $u_{(t, x)}=\bar{w}_{(t, x)}+v_{(t, x)}$, for every $(t, x) \in J \times[0, b]$ and the function $w(.,$.$) satisfies$

$$
\begin{aligned}
w(t, x) & =\sum_{0<t_{k}<t}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \left.\left.\left.\left.\left.\times f\left(s, y, \bar{w}_{\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}(s, y, u}(s, y)\right)\right)\right)+v_{\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}(s, y, u}(s, y)\right)\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \left.\times f\left(s, y, \bar{w}_{\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}(s, y, u(s, y))}\right)+v_{\left.\left(s, y, u u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}(s, y, u(s, y))\right)}\right) d y d s
\end{aligned}
$$

Set

$$
C_{0}=\{w \in \Omega: w(t, x)=0 \text { for }(t, x) \in E\}
$$

and let $\|.\|_{C_{0}}$ be the norm in $C_{0}$ defined by

$$
\|w\|_{C_{0}}=\sup _{(t, x) \in E}\left\|w_{(t, x)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}}+\sup _{(t, x) \in J}\|w(t, x)\|=\sup _{(t, x) \in J}\|w(t, x)\|, w \in C_{0} .
$$

### 4.3. IMPULSIVE PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS WITH INFINITE DELAY59

$C_{0}$ is a Banach space with norm $\|\cdot\|_{C_{0}}$. Let the operators $A, B: C_{0} \rightarrow C_{0}$ defined by

$$
(A w)(t, x)=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} \\
\times f\left(s, y, \bar{w}_{\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}\right.} \quad k=1, \ldots, m\right. \\
+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{\left.\left.t_{k}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} \\
\left.\left.\times f\left(s, y, v_{\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}\right.}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right)\right) d y d s \\
(t, x) \in J .
\end{array}\right.
$$

and

$$
(B w)(t, x)=\mu(t, x)+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right),(t, x) \in J .
$$

Then the problem of finding the solution of the $I V P$ (4.10)-(4.13) is reduced to finding the solutions of the operator equation $A(w)+B(w)=w$. We shall show that the operators $A$ and $B$ satisfy the conditions of Theorem 4.5. The proof will be given by a couple of steps.

Step 1: $A$ is continuous.
Let $\left\{w_{n}\right\}$ be a sequence such that $w_{n} \rightarrow w$ in $C_{0}$, then for each $(t, x) \in J$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|A\left(w_{n}\right)(t, x)-A(w)(t, x)\right\| \\
& \leq \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \times \| f\left(s, y, \bar{w}_{\left.\left.n\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right)}+v_{\left.\left.n\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right)}\right) \\
& -f\left(s, y, \bar{w}_{\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)}\right)}+v_{\left.\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right), \rho_{2}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right)\right)}\right) \| d y d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \times \| f\left(s, y, \bar{w}_{\left.\left.n\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right)}+v_{\left.\left.\left.n\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right)\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right)}\right) \\
& \left.-f\left(s, y, \bar{w}_{\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}^{\left.(s, y)), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)}\right.}\right)+v_{\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}^{\left.(s, y)), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)}\right.}\right) \| d y d s . \\
& \leq \frac{\left\|f\left(., ., \bar{w}_{n(., .)}+v_{n(., .)}\right)-f\left(., ., \bar{w}_{(., .)}+v_{(., .)}\right)\right\|}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s \\
& +\frac{\left\|f\left(., ., \bar{w}_{n(. . .)}+v_{n(. .,}\right)-f\left(.,, \bar{w}_{(. .)}+v_{(. .,)}\right)\right\|}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $f$ is continuous function, we have

$$
\left\|A\left(w_{n}\right)-A(w)\right\|_{C_{0}} \leq \frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\left\|f\left(., ., w_{n(.,)}\right)-f\left(., ., w_{(., .)}\right)\right\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \rightarrow 0 \text { as } n \rightarrow \infty
$$

Thus $A$ is continuous.
Step 2: $A$ maps bounded sets into bounded sets in $C_{0}$.
Indeed, it is enough show that for any $\eta^{*}$, there exists a positive constant $l$ such that, for each $w \in B_{\eta^{*}}=\left\{w \in C_{0}:\|w\|_{(a, b)} \leq \eta^{*}\right\}$ we have $\|A(w)\|_{\infty} \leq l$
By (H2) we have for each $(x, y) \in\left(x_{k}, x_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b]$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|A(w)(t, x)\| & \leq \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \left.\left.\times \| f\left(s, y, \bar{w}_{\left.\left.\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right)}+v_{\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}(s, y, u}(s, y)\right)\right)\right) \| d y d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \times\left\|f\left(s, y, \bar{w}_{\left.\left.\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}(s, y, u(s, y))\right)\right)}+v_{\left.\left.\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.} u_{(s, y)}\right), \rho_{2}(s, y, u(s, y))\right)\right)}\right)\right\| d y d s \\
& \leq \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\|A(w)\|_{B} \leq \frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\left(\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}\right)}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}:=l
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, y)}+v_{(s, y)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}} & \leq\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, y)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}}+\left\|v_{(s, y)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}} \\
& \leq K \eta^{*}+K\|\phi(0,0)\|+M\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}:=\eta .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence $\|A(w)\|_{C_{0}} \leq l$.
Step 3: $A$ maps bounded sets into equicontinuous sets in $C_{0}$.
Let $\left(t_{1}, x_{1}\right),\left(t_{2}, x_{2}\right) \in(0, a] \times(0, b], t_{1}<t_{2}, x_{1}<x_{2}, B_{\eta^{*}}$ be a bounded set as in Step 2 .

### 4.3. IMPULSIVE PARTIAL DIFFERENTIAL EQUATIONS WITH INFINITE DELAY61

Let $w \in B_{\eta^{*}}$, then

$$
\left\|A(w)\left(t_{2}, x_{2}\right)-A(w)\left(t_{1}, x_{1}\right)\right\|
$$

$$
\leq \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left[\left(x_{2}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(x_{1}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right]
$$

$$
\times f\left(s, y, \bar{w}_{\left.\left(s, y, u u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}^{(s, y))}\right)_{\left.\left.\rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right)}\right)}+v_{\left.\left.\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right)}\right) d y d s
$$

$$
+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1}
$$

$$
\left.\left.\times \| f\left(s, y, \bar{w}_{\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}(s, y, u}{ }_{(s, y)))}+v_{\left(s, y, u u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}\right.}{ }_{(s, y))), \rho_{2}(s, y, u}(s, y)\right)\right)\right) \| d y d s
$$

$$
+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left[\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(t_{1}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{1}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right]
$$

$$
\times f\left(s, y, \bar{w}_{\left.\left.\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right)}+v_{\left.\left.\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right)}\right) d y d x
$$

$$
+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1}
$$

$$
\left.\left.\times \| f\left(s, y, \bar{w}_{\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}(s, y, u}{ }_{(s, y)))}+v_{\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}\right.}{ }_{(s, y)), \rho_{2}(s, y, u}(s, y)\right)\right)\right) \| d y d s
$$

$$
+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1}
$$

$$
\times\left\|f\left(s, y, \bar{w}_{\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}(s, y, u}{ }_{(s, y)))}+v_{\left.\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.} u_{(s, y)}\right), \rho_{2}(s, y, u(s, y))\right)}\right)\right\| d y d s
$$

$$
+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1}
$$

$$
\times\left\|f\left(s, y, \bar{w}_{\left.\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)}+v_{\left.\left.\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.} u_{(s, y)}\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right)}\right)\right\| d y d s
$$

$$
\leq \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left[\left(x_{2}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(x_{1}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] d y d s
$$

$$
+\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s
$$

$$
+\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left[\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(t_{1}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{1}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] d y d s
$$

$$
+\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s
$$

$$
+\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t_{1}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s
$$

$$
+\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{t_{1}}^{t_{2}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{2}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s
$$

$$
\leq \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x_{1}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left[\left(x_{2}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1}-\left(x_{1}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1}\right] d y d s
$$

$$
+\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{x_{1}}^{x_{2}}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}\left(x_{2}-y\right)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s
$$

$$
+\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}+\|q\|_{\infty} \eta^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\left[2 x_{2}^{r_{2}}\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right)^{r_{1}}+2 t_{2}^{r_{1}}\left(x_{2}-x_{1}\right)^{r_{2}}\right.
$$

$$
\left.+t_{1}^{r_{1}} x_{1}^{r_{2}}-t_{2}^{r_{1}} x_{2}^{r_{2}}-2\left(t_{2}-t_{1}\right)^{r_{1}}\left(x_{2}-x_{1}\right)^{r_{2}}\right] .
$$

As $t_{1} \rightarrow t_{2}, x_{1} \rightarrow x_{2}$ the right-hand side of the above inequality tends to zero.
As a consequence of Steps 1 to 3 , together with the Arzela-Ascoli theorem, we can conclude that $A: C_{0} \rightarrow C_{0}$ is continuous and completely continuous.

Step 4: $B$ is a contraction.
Let $w, w^{*} \in C_{0}$, then we have for each $(t, x) \in J$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|B(w)(t, x)-B\left(w^{*}\right)(t, x)\right\| \\
& \leq \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|I_{k}\left(w\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(w^{*}\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)\right\|+\left\|I_{k}\left(w\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(w^{*}\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right\|\right) \\
& \leq \sum_{k=1}^{m} l\left(\left\|w-w^{*}\right\|_{C_{0}}+\left\|w-w^{*}\right\|_{C_{0}}\right) \\
& \leq 2 m l\left\|w-w^{*}\right\|_{C_{0}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\left\|B(w)-B\left(w^{*}\right)\right\|_{C_{0}} \leq 2 m l\left\|w-w^{*}\right\|_{C_{0}}
$$

Hence by (4.14), $B$ is a contraction.

## Step 5: (A priori bounds)

Now it remains to show that the set

$$
\mathcal{E}=\left\{w \in C_{0}: w=\lambda B\left(\frac{w}{\lambda}\right)+\lambda A(w), \text { for some } \lambda \in(0,1)\right\}
$$

is bounded. Let $w \in \mathcal{E}$, then $w=\lambda B\left(\frac{w}{\lambda}\right)+\lambda A(w)$. Thus, for each $(x, y) \in J$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
w(t, x) & \left.=\lambda \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\| I_{k} \frac{\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)}{\lambda}\right)\|+\| I_{k} \frac{\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)}{\lambda} \|\right) \\
& +\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \times f\left(s, y, \bar{w}_{\left.\left(s, y, u u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)}+v_{\left.\left.\left(s, y, u u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u\right.}(s, y)\right), \rho_{2}\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right)\right)\right)}\right) d y d s \\
& +\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \left.\left.\times f\left(s, y, \bar{w}_{\left.\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u(s, y)\right.}\right), \rho_{2}(s, y, u, u(s, y))\right)}+v_{\left(s, y, u_{\left(\rho_{1}(s, y, u(s, y))\right.}\right), \rho_{2}(s, y, u}(s, y)\right)\right)\right) d y d s
\end{aligned}
$$

This implies by $(H 2)$ and $(H 3)$ that, for each $(t, x) \in J$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|w(t, x)\| & \leq \sum_{k=1}^{m} \lambda\left(\left\|I_{k} \frac{u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)}{\lambda}\right\|-\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\|+\left\|I_{k} \frac{u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)}{\lambda}\right\|-\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\|\right) \\
& +2 \lambda \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\|+\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \times\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, y)}+v_{(s, y)}\right\|_{B} d y d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, y)}+v_{(s, y)}\right\|_{B} d y d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s \\
& \leq l \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*} \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, y)}+v_{(s, y)}\right\|_{B} d y d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, y)}+v_{(s, y)}\right\|_{B} d y d s \\
& +\frac{\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} d y d s,
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
I^{*}=\sum_{k=1}^{m}\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\| .
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, y)}+v_{(s, y)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}} & \leq\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, y)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}}+\left\|v_{(s, y)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}} \\
& \leq K \sup _{\{w(\tilde{s}, \tilde{y}):(\tilde{s}, \tilde{y}) \in[0, s] \times[0, t]\}} \\
& +M\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}+K\|\phi(0,0)\| .
\end{align*}
$$

If we name $\gamma(s, y)$ the right hand side of (4.15), then we have

$$
\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, y)}+v_{(s, y)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}} \leq \gamma(t, x),
$$

and therefore, for $\gamma(t, x) \in J$ we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
\|w(t, x)\| \leq & l \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \\
+ & \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)}\left(\sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right. \\
& \left.+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right) . \tag{4.16}
\end{align*}
$$

Using the above inequality and the definition of $\gamma$ for each $(t, x) \in J$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\gamma(t, x) & \leq M\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}+K\|\phi(0,0)\|+l \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*} \\
& +\frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\left(\sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right. \\
& \left.+\int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \gamma(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right)+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

If $(t, x) \in J$, then Lemma 1.4 implies that there exists $\tilde{k}=\tilde{k}\left(r_{2}, r_{2}\right)$ such that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\gamma(t, x) & \leq\left(M\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}+K\|\phi(0,0)\|+l \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)\right. \\
& \left.+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\right) \\
& \times\left(1+\tilde{k} \frac{\|p\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s\right) \\
& \leq\left(M\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}+K\|\phi(0,0)\|+l \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)\right. \\
& \left.+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}\|q\|_{\infty}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\right) \\
& \times\left(1+\tilde{k} \frac{\|p\|_{\infty} a^{r_{1}} b^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\right):=\tilde{R} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since for every $(t, x) \in J,\left\|w_{(t, x))}\right\|_{\infty} \leq \gamma(t, x)$.
This shows that the set $\mathcal{E}$ is bounded. As a consequence of Theorem 4.5 we deduce that $A+B$ has a fixed point which is a solution of problem (4.10)-(4.13).

### 4.3.3 An Example

We consider now the following impulsive fractional order partial hyperbolic functional equations with infinite delay of the form

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{0}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=\frac{c e^{t+x-\gamma(t+x)}\left|u\left(t-\sigma_{1}(u(t, x)), x-\sigma_{2}(u(t, x))\right)\right|}{\left(e^{t+x}+e^{-t-x}\right)\left(1+\left|u\left(t-\sigma_{1}(u(t, x)), x-\sigma_{2}(u(t, x))\right)\right|\right)}, \\
\text { if }(t, x) \in[0,1] \times[0,1], t \neq \frac{k}{k+1} ; k=1, \ldots, m .  \tag{4.17}\\
u\left(\left(\frac{k}{k+1}\right)^{+}, x\right)=u\left(\left(\frac{k}{k+1}\right)^{-}, x\right)+\frac{\left|u\left(\left(\frac{k}{k+1}\right)^{-}, x\right)\right|}{3 m k+\left|u\left(\left(\frac{k}{k+1}\right)^{-}, x\right)\right|}, x \in[0,1], k=1, \ldots, m,  \tag{4.18}\\
u(t, x)=t+x^{2},(t, x) \in(-\infty, 1] \times(-\infty, 1] \backslash(0,1] \times(0,1],  \tag{4.19}\\
u(t, 0)=t, u(0, x)=x^{2},(t, x) \in[0,1] \times[0,1], \tag{4.20}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $c=\frac{10}{\Gamma\left(r_{r}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}, \gamma$ a positive real constant and $\sigma_{1}, \sigma_{2} \in C(\mathbb{R},[0, \infty))$. Let $\mathcal{B}_{\gamma}$ be tha phase space. Set

$$
\begin{gathered}
\rho_{1}(t, x, \varphi)=t-\sigma_{1}(\varphi(0,0)), \quad(t, x, \varphi) \in J \times \mathcal{B}_{\gamma}, \\
\rho_{2}(t, x, \varphi)=x-\sigma_{2}(\varphi(0,0)), \quad(t, x, \varphi) \in J \times \mathcal{B}_{\gamma} \\
f(t, x, \varphi)=\frac{c e^{t+x-\gamma(t+x)}|\varphi|}{\left(e^{t+x}+e^{-t-x}\right)(1+|\varphi|)},(t, x) \in[0,1] \times[0,1], \varphi \in \mathcal{B}_{\gamma}
\end{gathered}
$$

and

$$
I_{k}(u)=\frac{u}{3 m k+u} ; u \in \mathbb{R}, k=1, \ldots, m
$$

We easily show that conditions of Theorem 4.5 are satisfied, and hence problem (4.17)(4.20) has a unique solution defined on $(-\infty, 1] \times(-\infty, 1]$

## Chapter 5

## Global Uniqueness Results for Impulsive Partial Hyperbolic Functional Differential Equations of Fractional Order

### 5.1 Introduction

This chapter deals with the global existence and uniqueness of solutions for impulsive partial functional differential equations with delay, involving the Caputo fractional derivative. Our works will be conducted by using a nonlinear alternative of Leray-Schauder due to Frigon-Granas type for contraction maps on Fréchet spaces.

### 5.2 Existence Results for the Finite Delay Case

### 5.2.1 Introduction

This section deals with the existence of solutions for impulsive initial value problem for differential equations of fractional order with fixed time impulses given by

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=f\left(t, x, u_{(t, x)}\right), \text { if }(t, x) \in J_{k}, k=0, \ldots, m,  \tag{5.1}\\
u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \text { if } x \in[0, b] ; k=1, \ldots, m,  \tag{5.2}\\
u(t, x)=\phi(t, x) ; \text { if }(t, x) \in \tilde{J},  \tag{5.3}\\
u(t, 0)=\varphi(t), u(0, x)=\psi(x), t \in[0, a], x \in[0, b], \tag{5.4}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $J_{0}=\left[0, t_{1}\right] \times[0, b], \quad J_{k}:=\left(t_{k}, t_{k+1}\right] \times[0, b], \quad k=1, \ldots, m, z_{k}=\left(t_{k}, 0\right), \quad k=$ $0, \ldots, m, \varphi(0)=\psi(0), J:=[0, \infty) \times[0, \infty), \tilde{J}:=[-\alpha, \infty) \times[-\beta, \infty) \backslash[0, \infty) \times[0, \infty), \alpha, \beta>$ $0,{ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r}$ is the standard Caputo's fractional derivative of order $r=\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right) \in(0,1] \times$
$(0,1], f: J \times C\left([-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0], \mathbb{R}^{n}\right) \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, I_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}, k=0,1, \ldots, m$ are given functions, for each $(t, x) \in J, \varphi, \psi:[0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$, are given absolutely continuous functions and $C\left([-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0], \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ is the space of continuous functions on $[-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0]$. We denote by $u_{(t, x)}$ the element of $C\left([-\alpha, \infty) \times[-\beta, \infty), \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ defined by

$$
u_{(t, x)}(s, \tau)=u(t+s, x+\tau) ; \quad(s, \tau) \in[-\alpha, 0] \times[-\beta, 0],
$$

here $u_{(t, x)}(.,$.$) represents the history of the state from time t-\alpha$ up to the present time $t$ and from time $x-\beta$ up to the present time $x$.

### 5.2.2 Main Results

In this section we present a global existence and uniqueness result for the problem (5.1)(5.4).

We shall consider the space

$$
\begin{aligned}
& P C=\left\{u: J \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}: u \in C\left(J_{k}, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right) ; k=1, \ldots, m, \text { and there exist } u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right. \text { and } \\
& \left.\quad u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right) ; k=1, \ldots, m, \text { with } u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}, x\right)\right\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

For each $p, q \in \mathbb{N}$ we consider following set,

$$
C_{(p, q)}=C\left([-\alpha, p] \times[-\beta, q], \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)
$$

and we define in $C_{0}:=C\left([-\alpha, \infty) \times[-\beta, \infty), \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ the semi-norms by:

$$
\|u\|_{(p, q)}=\{\sup \|u(t, x)\|:-\alpha \leq t \leq p,-\beta \leq x \leq q\} .
$$

Let

$$
\Omega=\left\{u: J \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}: u \in P C \cap C_{0}\right\}
$$

Then $\Omega$ is a Fréchet space with the family of semi-norms $\left\{\|u\|_{(p, q)}\right\}$.
Let us start by defining what we mean by a solution of the problem (5.1)-(5.4)
Definition 5.1 A function $u \in \Omega$ is said to be a solution of (5.1)-(5.4) if $u$ satisfies equations (5.1)-(5.4) on $J$ and the condition (5.3) on $\tilde{J}$.

For the existence of solutions for the problem (5.1)-(5.4), we need the following lemma:
Lemma 5.2 [7] Let $0<r_{1}, r_{2} \leq 1$ and let $h: J \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ be continuous. A function $u$ is a solution of the fractional integral equation

$$
u(t, x)=\left\{\begin{array}{lr}
\phi(t, x) & \text { if }(t, x) \in \tilde{J},  \tag{5.5}\\
\mu(t, x)+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) & \text { if }(t, x) \in J, \\
+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1} \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)\right.} \sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d y d s & k=1, \ldots, m, \\
+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} h(s, y) d y d s &
\end{array}\right.
$$

if and only if $u$ is a solution of the fractional initial value problem

$$
\begin{align*}
& { }^{c} D^{r} u(t, x)=h(t, x), \quad(t, x) \in J_{k}, k=0, \ldots, m  \tag{5.6}\\
& u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \quad k=1, \ldots, m \tag{5.7}
\end{align*}
$$

Further, we present conditions for the existence and uniqueness of a solution of problem (5.1)-(5.3).

Theorem 5.3 Assume
(H1) The functions $I_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ are continuous.
(H2) For each $p, q \in \mathbb{N}$, there exists $\ell_{(p, q)} \in C\left(J_{0}, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ such that for each $(t, x) \in \widetilde{J}_{0}$

$$
\|f(t, x, u)-f(t, x, v)\| \leq \ell_{(p, q)}(t, x)\|u-v\|_{C}, \text { for each } u, v \in \mathbb{R}^{n} .
$$

(H3) For each $p, q \in \mathbb{N}$, there exists $\bar{\ell}_{(p, q)} \in C\left(J_{0}, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ such that for each $(t, x) \in \widetilde{J}_{0}$

$$
\left\|I_{k}(u)-I_{k}(v)\right\| \leq \bar{\ell}_{(p, q)}\|u-v\|_{C}, \text { for each } u, v \in \mathbb{R}^{n} .
$$

If

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 m \bar{\ell}_{(p, q)}+\frac{2 \ell_{(p, q)}^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}<1 \tag{5.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\ell_{(p, q)}^{*}=\sup _{(t, x) \in \widetilde{J}_{0}} \ell_{(p, q)}(t, x),
$$

then there exists a unique solution for IVP (5.1)-(5.4) on $[-\alpha, \infty) \times[-\beta, \infty)$.
Proof: Transform the problem (5.1)-(5.4) into a fixed point problem. Consider the operator $N: \Omega \rightarrow \Omega$ defined by,
$(N u)(t, x)= \begin{cases}\phi(t, x) & \text { if }(t, x) \in \tilde{J}, \\ \mu(t, x)+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) & \text { if }(t, x) \in J, \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right) d y d s & k=1, \ldots, m, \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right) d y d s & \end{cases}$

Let $u$ be a possible solution of the problem $u=\lambda N(u)$ for some $0<\lambda<1$. Thus for each $(t, x) \in \widetilde{J}_{0}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
u(t, x) & =\lambda \mu(t, x)+\lambda \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=0}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left(t_{k}-s\right)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right) d y d s \\
& +\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-y)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, y, u_{(s, y)}\right) d y d s
\end{aligned}
$$

This implies by $(H 2)$ and (H3) that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|u(t, x)\| & =\lambda\|\mu(t, x)\|+\lambda \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)\right\|-\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\|+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\|-\| I_{k}(0) \|\right) \\
& +2 \lambda \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\|+\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \times\left\|f\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right)-f(s, \tau, 0)\right\| d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}\|f(s, \tau, 0)\| d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right)-f(s, \tau, 0)\right\| d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}\|f(s, \tau, 0)\| d \tau d s \\
& \leq\|\mu(t, x)\|+\bar{l} \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 f^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)}\left(\sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \ell_{(p, q)}(s, \tau)\left\|u_{(s, \tau)}\right\|_{C} d \tau d s\right. \\
& \left.+\int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \ell_{(p, q)}(s, \tau)\left\|u_{(s, \tau)}\right\|_{C} d \tau d s\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

where $f^{*}=\sup _{(s, \tau) \in J_{0}}\|f(s, \tau, 0)\|, I^{*}=\sum_{k=1}^{m}\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\|$
We consider the function $y$ defined by

$$
y(t, x)=\sup \{\|u(s, \tau)\|:-\alpha \leq s \leq t,-\beta \leq \tau \leq x\}, 0 \leq t \leq p, 0 \leq x \leq q
$$

Let $\left(t^{*}, x^{*}\right) \in[-\alpha, t] \times[-\beta, x]$ be such that $y(t, x)=\left\|u\left(t^{*}, x^{*}\right)\right\|$. If $\left(t^{*}, x^{*}\right) \in \widetilde{J}_{0}$, then by the previous inequality, we have for $(t, x) \in J_{0}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\|u(t, x)\| \leq & \|\mu(t, x)\|+\bar{l} \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 f^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \\
+ & \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)}\left(\sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \ell_{(p, q)}(s, \tau) y(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right. \\
& \left.+\int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \ell_{(p, q)}(s, \tau) y(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right) . \tag{5.9}
\end{align*}
$$

If $\left(t^{*}, x^{*}\right) \in \tilde{J}$, then $y(t, x)=\|\phi\|_{C}$ and the previous inequality holds. By (5.9) obtain that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|y(t, x)\| & =\|\mu(t, x)\|+\bar{l} \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 f^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)}\left(\sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \ell_{(p, q)}(s, \tau) y(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right. \\
& \left.+\int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \ell_{(p, q)}(s, \tau) y(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right) \\
& \leq\|\mu(t, x)\|+\bar{l} \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 f^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)}\left(\sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} y(s, \tau) \tau d s\right. \\
& \left.+\int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} y(s, \tau) \tau d s\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

and Lemma 1.4 implies that there exists a constant $\delta=\delta\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right)$ such that we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
y(t, x) \leq & {\left[\|\mu\|_{(p, q)}+\bar{l} \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 f^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\right] } \\
& \times\left[1+\frac{\delta \ell_{(p, q)}^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} d \tau d s\right] \\
:= & M_{(p, q)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then from (5.9) we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|u\|_{(p, q)} & \leq\|\mu\|_{(p, q)}+\bar{l} \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*} \\
& +\frac{2 f^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}+\frac{M_{(p, q)} \ell_{(p, q)}^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \\
& :=M_{(p, q)}^{*} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since for every $(t, x) \in \widetilde{J}_{0},\left\|u_{(t, x)}\right\|_{C} \leq y(t, x)$, we have

$$
\|u\|_{(p, q)} \leq \max \left(\|\phi\|_{C}, M_{(p, q)}^{*}\right):=R_{(p, q)} .
$$

Set

$$
U=\left\{u \in \Omega:\|u\|_{(p, q)} \leq R_{(p, q)}+1 \text { for all } p, q \in \mathbb{N}\right\}
$$

We shall show that $N: U \rightarrow C_{(p, q)}$ is a contraction maps. Indeed, consider $v, w \in U$. Then for each $(t, x) \in \widetilde{J}_{0}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|(N v)(t, x)-(N w)(t, x)\| \leq & \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left|(t-s)^{r_{1}-1} \|(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}\right| \\
& \times\left\|f\left(s, \tau, v_{(s, \tau)}\right)-f\left(s, \tau, w_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right\| d \tau d s \\
+ & \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}\left|(t-s)^{r_{1}-1} \|(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}\right| \\
& \times\left\|f\left(s, \tau, v_{(s, \tau)}\right)-f\left(s, \tau, w_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right\| d \tau d s \\
\leq & \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \times \ell_{(p, q)}\left\|v_{(s, \tau)}-w_{(s, \tau)}\right\|_{C} d \tau d s \\
+ & \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \times \ell_{(p, q)}\left\|v_{(s, \tau)}-w_{(s, \tau)}\right\|_{C} d \tau d s \\
\leq & \frac{2 \ell_{(p, q)}^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\|v-w\|_{(p, q)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\|(N v)(t, x)-(N w)(t, x)\|_{(p, q)} \leq \frac{2 \ell_{(p, q)}^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\|v-w\|_{(p, q)}
$$

Hence by (5.9), $N: U \rightarrow C_{(p, q)}$ is a contraction.
By the choice of $U$, there is no $u \in \partial_{n} U^{n}$ such that $u=\lambda N(u)$, for $\lambda \in(0,1)$. As a consequence of Theorem 5.3, we deduce that $N$ has a unique fixed point $u$ in $U$ which is a solution to problem (5.1)-(5.4).

### 5.2.3 An Example

As an application of our results we consider the following fractional order partial hyperbolic functional differential equations with finite delay of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=\frac{c_{(p, q)}}{e^{t+x+2}(1+|u(t, x)|)}, \quad \text { if }(t, x) \in J:=[0, \infty) \times[0, \infty) \tag{5.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{gather*}
u\left(\frac{1}{2}^{+}, y\right)=u\left(\frac{1}{2}^{-}, y\right)+\frac{\left|u\left(\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)^{-}, y\right)\right|}{3+\left|u\left(\left(\frac{1}{2}\right)^{-}, y\right)\right|}, \text { if } y \in[0,1],  \tag{5.11}\\
u(t, x)=t+x^{2},(t, x) \in \tilde{J}:=[-1, \infty) \times[-2, \infty) \backslash[0, \infty) \times[0, \infty),  \tag{5.12}\\
u(t, 0)=t, u(0, x)=x^{2},(t, x) \in J, \tag{5.13}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $z_{0}=(0,0), z_{1}=\left(\frac{1}{2}, 0\right)$ and

$$
\begin{gathered}
c_{(p, q)}=\frac{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}{p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}, \quad p, q \in \mathbb{N}^{*} \\
f(t, x, \varphi)=\frac{c_{(p, q)}}{\left(e^{t+x+2}\right)(1+|\varphi|)},(t, x) \in J, \varphi \in C([-1,0] \times[-2,0], \mathbb{R}),
\end{gathered}
$$

and

$$
I_{1}(u)=\frac{|u|}{\frac{1}{4}+|u|}
$$

It is clear that the functions $f$ and $I_{1}$ are continuous, and for each $p, q \in \mathbb{N}^{*}$ and $\varphi, \bar{\varphi} \in$ $C([-1,0] \times[-2,0], \mathbb{R})$ and $(t, x) \in J_{0}:=[0, p] \times[0, q]$ we have

$$
|f(t, x, \varphi)-f(t, x, \bar{\varphi})| \leq \frac{c_{(p, q)}}{e^{2}}\|\varphi-\bar{\varphi}\|_{C}
$$

Also, for $u, v \in \mathbb{R}$, we have

$$
\left|I_{1}(u)-I_{1}(v)\right| \leq \frac{1}{4}|u-v|
$$

Hence conditions (H2) and (H3) are satisfied with $\bar{l}=\frac{1}{4}$ and $\ell_{(p, q)}^{*}=\frac{c_{(p, q)}}{e^{2}}$. We shall show that condition (5.4) holds for all $p, q \in \mathbb{N}^{*}$. Indeed

$$
2 m \bar{l}+\frac{\ell_{(p, q)}^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}=2 \frac{1}{4}+\frac{1}{e^{2} \Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}<1
$$

which is satisfied for each $\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right) \in(0,1] \times(0,1]$. Consequently Theorem 5.3 implies that problem (5.10)-(5.12) has a unique solution defined on $[-1, \infty) \times[-2, \infty)$.

### 5.3 Existence Results for the Infinite Delay Case

### 5.3.1 Introduction

Next result deals with the existence of solutions to fractional order partial differential equations

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=f(t, x, u(t, x)), \text { if }(t, x) \in J_{k}, k=0, \ldots, m,  \tag{5.14}\\
& u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right), \text { if } x \in[0, b] ; k=1, \ldots, m, \tag{5.15}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{gather*}
u(t, x)=\phi(t, x) ; \text { if }(t, x) \in \tilde{J}^{\prime},  \tag{5.16}\\
u(t, 0)=\varphi(t), u(0, x)=\psi(x), t \in[0, a], x \in[0, b], \tag{5.17}
\end{gather*}
$$

where $\varphi, \psi$ are as in problem (??)-(??), $\tilde{J}^{\prime}=:(-\infty,+\infty) \times(-\infty,+\infty) \backslash[0, \infty) \times[0, \infty), f$ : $J \times \mathcal{B} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}, \phi: \tilde{J}^{\prime} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ and $\mathcal{B}$ is called a phase space that will be specified in.

### 5.3.2 Main Results

In this section we present a global existence and uniqueness result for the problem (5.14)(5.17).

Let the space

$$
\begin{aligned}
\widetilde{P C}= & \left\{u:(-\infty, a] \times(-\infty, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}: u_{(t, x)} \in B \text { for }(t, x) \in E\right. \text { and there exist } \\
& u\left(t_{k}^{-}, .\right), u\left(t_{k}^{+}, .\right) \text {exist with } u\left(t_{k}^{-}, .\right)=u\left(t_{k}, .\right) ; k=1, \ldots, m, \text { and } \\
& \left.u \in C\left(J_{k}, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right) ; k=0, \ldots, m\right\},
\end{aligned}
$$

Definition 5.4 $A$ function $u \in \widetilde{P C}$ is said to be a solution of (5.14)-(5.17) if $u$ satisfies equations (5.14) and (5.17) on $J$ and the condition (5.15) on $\tilde{J}^{\prime}$.

For each $p, q \in \mathbb{N}$ we consider following set,

$$
C_{(p, q)}^{\prime}=\left\{u: \mathbb{R}^{2} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}: u_{(t, x)} \in \mathcal{B} \cap C\left(\widetilde{J}_{0}, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right), u_{(t, x)}=0 \text { for }(t, x) \in E\right\},
$$

and we define in

$$
C_{0}^{\prime}=\left\{u: \mathbb{R}^{2} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}: u_{(t, x)} \in \mathcal{B} \bigcap C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right), u_{(t, x)}=0 \text { for }(t, x) \in E\right\}
$$

the semi-norms by:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|u\|_{(p, q)} & =\sup _{(t, x) \in E}\left\|u_{(t, x)}\right\|+\sup _{(t, x) \in \widetilde{J}_{0}}\|u(t, x)\| \\
& =\sup _{(t, x) \in \widetilde{J_{0}}}\|u(t, x)\|, \quad u \in C_{(p, q)}^{\prime} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then $C_{0}^{\prime}$ is a Fréchet space with the family of semi-norms $\left\{\|u\|_{(p, q)}\right\}$.
Further, we present conditions for the existence and uniqueness of a solution of problem (4.10)-(4.13)

Theorem 5.5 Assume the following hypothesis holds:
( $H^{\prime} 1$ ) The functions $I_{k}: \mathbb{R}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ are continuous.
( $\left.H^{\prime} 2\right)$ For each $p, q \in \mathbb{N}$, there exists $\ell_{(p, q)} \in C\left(\widetilde{J}_{0}, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ such that for each $(t, x) \in \widetilde{J}_{0}$

$$
\|f(t, x, u)-f(t, x, v)\| \leq \ell_{(p, q)}(t, x)\|u-v\|_{\mathcal{B}}, \text { for each } u, v \in \mathcal{B} .
$$

$\left(H^{\prime} 3\right)$ For each $p, q \in \mathbb{N}$, there exists $\widetilde{\ell}_{(p, q)} \in C\left(\widetilde{J}_{0}, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ such that for each $(t, x) \in \widetilde{J}_{0}$

$$
\left\|I_{k}(u)-I_{k}(v)\right\| \leq \tilde{\ell}_{(p, q)}\|u-v\|, \text { for each } u, v \in \mathbb{R}^{n} .
$$

If

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 m \bar{l}+\frac{k \widetilde{\ell}_{(p, q)}^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}<1 \tag{5.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\widetilde{\ell}_{(p, q)}^{*}=\sup _{(t, x) \in \widetilde{J}_{0}} \ell_{(p, q)}(t, x),
$$

then there exists a unique solution for IVP (5.14)-(5.17) on $(-\infty, \infty) \times(-\infty, \infty)$.
Proof: Transform the problem (5.14)-(5.17) into a fixed point problem. Consider the operator $N^{\prime}: \widetilde{P C} \rightarrow \widetilde{P C}$ defined by,

$$
\left(N^{\prime} u\right)(t, x)= \begin{cases}\phi(t, x), & (t, x) \in \tilde{J}, \\ \mu(t, x)+\sum_{0<t_{k}<t}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) & \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \\ \times f\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)} d \tau d s\right. & \\ +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, \tau, u_{(s, \tau)}\right) d \tau d s, \quad(t, x) \in J .\end{cases}
$$

Let $v(.,):.(-\infty, a] \times(-\infty, b] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$ be a function defined by,

$$
v(t, x)= \begin{cases}\mu(t, x), & (t, x) \in J \\ \phi(t, x), & (t, x) \in \tilde{J}\end{cases}
$$

Then $v_{(t, x)}=\phi$ for all $(t, x) \in E$.
For each $w \in C\left(J, \mathbb{R}^{n}\right)$ with $w(t, x)=0$ for each $(t, x) \in E$ we denote by $\bar{w}$ the function defined by

$$
\bar{w}(t, x)= \begin{cases}w(t, x) & (t, x) \in J \\ 0, & (t, x) \in \tilde{J}\end{cases}
$$

If $u(.,$.$) satisfies the integral equation,$

$$
u(t, x)=\mu(t, x)+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{0}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, \tau, u_{s, \tau}\right) d \tau d s
$$

we can decompose $u(.,$.$) as$

$$
u(t, x)=\bar{w}(t, x)+v(t, x) ; \quad(t, x) \in J,
$$

which implies

$$
u_{(t, x)}=\bar{w}_{(t, x)}+v_{(t, x)}, \quad(t, x) \in J,
$$

and the function $w(.,$.$) satisfies$

$$
\begin{aligned}
w(t, x) & =\sum_{0<t_{k}<t}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, \tau, \bar{w}_{(s, \tau)}+v_{(s, \tau)}\right) d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, \tau, \bar{w}_{(s, \tau)}+v_{(s, \tau)}\right) d \tau d s
\end{aligned}
$$

Let the operator $P: C_{0}^{\prime} \rightarrow C_{0}^{\prime}$ be defined by

$$
\begin{align*}
(P w)(t, x) & =\sum_{0<t_{k}<t}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, \tau, \bar{w}_{(s, \tau)}+v_{(s, \tau)}\right) d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, \tau, \bar{w}_{(s, \tau)}+v_{(s, \tau)}\right) d \tau d s \quad(t, x) \in J . \quad(5.19) \tag{5.19}
\end{align*}
$$

Obviously, the operator $N^{\prime}$ has a fixed point is equivalent to $P$ has a fixed point, and so we turn to prove that $P$ has a fixed point. We shall use the nonlinear alternative of Leray-Schauder due to Frigon-Granas type to prove that $P$ has a fixed point. Let $w$ be a possible solution of the problem $w=\lambda P(w)$ for some $0<\lambda<1$. This implies that for each $(t, x) \in J_{0}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
w(t, x) & =\lambda \sum_{0<t_{k}<t}\left(I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)-I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right) \\
& +\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{0<t_{k}<t} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, \tau, \bar{w}_{(s, \tau)}+v_{(s, \tau)}\right) d \tau d s \\
& +\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} f\left(s, \tau, \bar{w}_{(s, \tau)}+v_{(s, \tau)}\right) d \tau d s
\end{aligned}
$$

This implies by $\left(H^{\prime} 2\right)$ and $\left(H^{\prime} 3\right)$ that

$$
\begin{align*}
&\|u(t, x)\| \leq \lambda \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right)\right\|-\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\|+\left\|I_{k}\left(u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right)\right\|-\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\|\right)+2 \lambda \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\| \\
&+\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \times\left\|f\left(s, \tau, \bar{w}_{(s, \tau)}+v_{(s, \tau)}\right)-f(s, \tau, 0)\right\| d \tau d s \\
&+\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}\|f(s, \tau, 0)\| d \tau d s \\
&+\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}\left\|f\left(s, \tau, \bar{w}_{(s, \tau)}+v_{(s, \tau)}\right)-f(s, \tau, 0)\right\| d \tau d s \\
&+\frac{\lambda}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}\|f(s, \tau, 0)\| d \tau d s \\
& \leq \bar{l} \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 f^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \\
&+\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)}\left(\sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \ell_{(p, q)}(s, \tau)\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, \tau)}+v_{(s, \tau)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}} d \tau d s,\right. \\
&\left.\int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \ell_{(p, q)}(s, \tau)\left\|u_{(s, \tau)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}} d \tau d s\right) \tag{5.20}
\end{align*}
$$

where $f^{*}=\sup _{(s, \tau) \in J_{0}}\|f(s, \tau, 0)\|, I^{*}=\sum_{k=1}^{m}\left\|I_{k}(0)\right\|$
and

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, \tau)}+v_{(s, \tau)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}} \leq & \left\|\bar{w}_{(s, \tau)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}}+\left\|v_{(s, \tau)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}} \\
\leq & K \sup \{w(\tilde{s}, \tilde{\tau}):(\tilde{s}, \tilde{\tau}) \in[0, s] \times[0, \tau]\} \\
& +(M)\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}+K\|\phi(0,0)\| . \tag{5.21}
\end{align*}
$$

If we name $y(s, \tau)$ the right hand side of (5.21), then we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\|\bar{w}_{(s, \tau)}+v_{(s, \tau)}\right\|_{\mathcal{B}} \leq y(t, x) . \tag{5.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore, from (5.20) and (5.22), then we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|w(t, x)\| \leq & \bar{l} \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 f^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)}\left(\sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \ell_{(p, q)}(s, \tau) y(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right. \\
+ & \left.\int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \ell_{(p, q)}(s, \tau) y(s, \tau) d \tau d s\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

Using the above inequality and the defintion of $y$, we have that

$$
\begin{aligned}
y(t, x) \leq & (M)\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}+K\|\phi(0,0)\|+\bar{l} \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*} \\
& +\frac{2 K f_{(p, q)}^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}+\frac{K \ell_{(p, q)}^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)}\left(\int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} y(s, t) d \tau d s\right. \\
& \left.+\int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} y(s, t) d \tau d s\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

By Lemma 1.4, there exists a costant $\delta=\delta\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right)$ such that we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|y\|_{(p, q)} & \leq\left[(M)\|\phi\|_{\mathcal{B}}+K\|\phi(0,0)\|+\bar{l} \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 K f_{(p, q)}^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\right] \\
& \times\left[1+\delta \frac{2 K \ell_{(p, q)}^{*}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\right] \\
& :=\widetilde{M} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then from (5.20) we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|w\|_{(p, q)} & \leq \bar{l} \sum_{k=1}^{m}\left(\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right\|+\left\|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, 0\right)\right\|\right)+2 I^{*}+\frac{2 f_{(p, q)}^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}+\widetilde{M} \frac{2 \ell_{(p, q)}^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)} \\
& :=\widetilde{M}^{*}
\end{aligned}
$$

Set

$$
U^{\prime}=\left\{w \in C_{0}:\|w\|_{(p, q)} \leq \widetilde{M}^{*}+1 \text { for all } p, q \in \mathbb{N}\right\}
$$

We shall show that $P: U^{\prime} \rightarrow C_{(p, q)}$ is a contraction maps. Indeed, consider $v, w \in U^{\prime}$.

Then for each $(t, x) \in J_{0}$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|(P v)(t, x)-(P w)(t, x)\| \leq & \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}\left|(t-s)^{r_{1}-1} \|(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}\right| \\
& \times\left\|f\left(s, \tau, v_{(s, \tau)}\right)-f\left(s, \tau, w_{(s, \tau)}\right)\right\| d \tau d s \\
+ & \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}\left|(t-s)^{r_{1}-1} \|(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1}\right| \\
& \times \| f\left(s, \tau, v_{(s, \tau)}-f\left(s, \tau, w_{(s, \tau)}\right) \| d \tau d s\right. \\
\leq & \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \sum_{k=1}^{m} \int_{t_{k-1}}^{t_{k}} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \left.\times \ell_{(p, q)}\right)\left\|v_{(s, \tau)}-w_{(s, \tau)}\right\|_{C} d \tau d s \\
+ & \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}\right)} \int_{t_{k}}^{t} \int_{0}^{x}(t-s)^{r_{1}-1}(x-\tau)^{r_{2}-1} \\
& \left.\times \ell_{(p, q)}\right) v_{(s, \tau)}-w_{(s, \tau)} \|_{C} d \tau d s \\
\leq & \frac{2 \ell_{(p, q)}^{*} p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\|v-w\|_{(p, q)} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\|(P v)(t, x)-(P w)(t, x)\|_{(p, q)} \leq \frac{\left.2 \ell_{(p, q)}^{*}\right)^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}\|v-w\|_{(p, q)}
$$

Hence by (5.18), $P: U^{\prime} \rightarrow C_{(p, q)}$ is a contraction.
By our choice of $U^{\prime}$, there is no $w \in \partial_{n} U^{\prime n}$ such that $w=\lambda P(w)$, for $\lambda \in(0,1)$. As a consequence of Theorem 5.5, we deduce that $P$ has a unique fixed point $w$ in $U^{\prime}$ which is a solution to problem (5.14)-(5.17).

### 5.3.3 An Example

As an application of our results we consider the following fractional order partial hyperbolic functional differential equations with infinite delay of the form

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left({ }^{c} D_{z_{k}}^{r} u\right)(t, x)=\frac{|u(t, x)|}{c_{(p, q)} e^{t+x}(1+|u(t, x)|)}, \text { if }(t, x) \in J:=[0, \infty) \times[0, \infty),  \tag{5.23}\\
u\left(t_{k}^{+}, x\right)=u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)+\frac{1}{\left(6 e^{t+x+4}\right)\left(1+\left|u\left(t_{k}^{-}, x\right)\right|\right)} ; x \in[0,1], k=1, \ldots, m,  \tag{5.24}\\
u(t, 0)=t, u(0, x)=x^{2},(t, x) \in J,  \tag{5.25}\\
u(t, x)=t+x^{2},(t, x) \in \tilde{J}:=\mathbb{R}^{2} \backslash[0, \infty) \times[0, \infty),  \tag{5.26}\\
c_{(p, q)}=\frac{3 p^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}
\end{gather*}
$$

80CHAPTER 5. GLOBAL UNIQUENESS FOR IMPULSIVE FRACTIONAL DIFFERENTIAL EQU

$$
\mathcal{B}_{\gamma}=\left\{u \in C((-\infty, 0] \times(-\infty, 0], \mathbb{R}): \lim _{\|(\theta, \eta)\| \rightarrow \infty} e^{\gamma(\theta+\eta)} u(\theta, \eta) \text { exists } \in \mathbb{R}\right\}
$$

The norm of $\mathcal{B}_{\gamma}$ is given by

$$
\|u\|_{\gamma}=\sup _{(\theta, \eta) \in(-\infty, 0] \times(-\infty, 0]} e^{\gamma(\theta+\eta)}|u(\theta, \eta)| .
$$

Let

$$
E:=[0,1] \times\{0\} \cup\{0\} \times[0,1],
$$

and $u:(-\infty, 1] \times(-\infty, 1] \rightarrow \mathbb{R}$ such that $u_{(t, x)} \in \mathcal{B}_{\gamma}$ for $(t, x) \in E$, then

$$
\lim _{\|(\theta, \eta)\| \rightarrow \infty} e^{\gamma(\theta+\eta)} u_{(t, x)}(\theta, \eta)=\lim _{\|(\theta, \eta)\| \rightarrow \infty} e^{\gamma(\theta-t+\eta-x)} u(\theta, \eta)=e^{\gamma(t+x)} \lim _{\|(\theta, \eta)\| \rightarrow \infty} u(\theta, \eta)<\infty .
$$

Hence $u_{(t, x)} \in \mathcal{B}_{\gamma}$. Finally we prove that

$$
\left\|u_{(t, x)}\right\|_{\gamma}=K \sup \{|u(s, \tau)|:(s, \tau) \in[0, t] \times[0, x]\}+M \sup \left\{\left\|u_{(s, \tau)}\right\|_{\gamma}:(s, \tau) \in E_{(t, x)}\right\}
$$

where $K=M=1$ and $H=1$,
If $t+\theta \leq 0, x+\eta \leq 0$ we get

$$
\left\|u_{(t, x)}\right\|_{\gamma}=\sup \{|u(s, \tau)|:(s, \tau) \in(-\infty, 0] \times(-\infty, 0]\}
$$

and if $t+\theta \geq 0, x+\eta \geq 0$ then we have

$$
\left\|u_{(t, x)}\right\|_{\gamma}=\sup \{|u(s, \tau)|:(s, \tau) \in[0, t] \times[0, x]\} .
$$

Thus for all $(t+\theta, x+\eta) \in[0,1] \times[0,1]$, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\|u_{(t, x)}\right\|_{\gamma}= & \sup \{|u(s, \tau)|:(s, \tau) \in(-\infty, 0] \times(-\infty, 0]\} \\
& +\sup \{|u(s, \tau)|:(s, \tau) \in[0, t] \times[0, x]\} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then

$$
\left\|u_{(t, x)}\right\|_{\gamma}=\sup \left\{\left\|u_{(s, \tau)}\right\|_{\gamma}:(s, \tau) \in E\right\}+\sup \{|u(s, \tau):(s, \tau) \in[0, t] \times[0, x]|\} .
$$

$\left(\mathcal{B}_{\gamma},\|\cdot\|_{\gamma}\right)$ is a Banach space. We conclude that $\mathcal{B}_{\gamma}$ is a phase space.

$$
f(t, x, \varphi)=\frac{|\varphi|}{c_{(p, q)} e^{t+x}(1+|\varphi|)}, \quad(t, x) \in J, \varphi \in \mathcal{B}_{\gamma}
$$

and

$$
I_{1}(u)=\frac{1}{\left(6 e^{t+x+4}\right)(1+|u|)} ; x \in[0,1] .
$$

For each $\varphi, \bar{\varphi} \in \mathcal{B}_{\gamma}$ we have

$$
|f(t, x, \varphi)-f(t, x, \bar{\varphi})| \leq \frac{1}{c_{(p, q)} e^{t+x}}\|\varphi-\bar{\varphi}\|_{\mathcal{B}_{\gamma}}
$$

For each $u, v \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$ and $(t, x) \in[0,1] \times[0,1]$ we have

$$
\left\|I_{1}(u)-I_{1}(v)\right\| \leq \frac{1}{6 e^{4}}\|u-v\| .
$$

Hence condition ( $H^{\prime} 2$ ) is satisfied with $\ell_{(p, q)} e^{t+x}=\frac{1}{c_{(p, q)} e^{t+x}}$. Since

$$
\ell_{(p, q)}^{*}=\sup \left\{\frac{1}{c_{(p, q)} e^{t+x}}, \quad(t, x) \in J\right\} \leq \frac{1}{c}
$$

and $K=1, m=1$ we get

$$
2 m \widetilde{l}+\frac{\left.k \ell_{(p, q)}^{*}\right)^{r_{1}} q^{r_{2}}}{\Gamma\left(r_{1}+1\right) \Gamma\left(r_{2}+1\right)}=\frac{1}{3 e^{4}}+\frac{1}{3}<1
$$

Hence condition (5.18) holds for each $\left(r_{1}, r_{2}\right) \in(0,1] \times(0,1]$ and all $p, q \in \mathbb{N}^{*}$. Consequently Theorem 5.5 implies that problem (5.23)-(5.25) has a unique solution defined on $\mathbb{R}^{2}$.

82CHAPTER 5. GLOBAL UNIQUENESS FOR IMPULSIVE FRACTIONAL DIFFERENTIAL EQU

## Conclusion

In this thesis, we have considered the problem of existence and uniqueness results of solutions for fractional order partial hyperbolic functional differential with fixed time impulses. Sufficient conditions for existence and uniqueness od solutions for initial value problems for partial differential equations involving the Caputo fractional derivative were given.

## Bibliography

[1] N. Abada, R. P. Agarwal, M. Benchohra and H. Hammouche, Existence results for nondensely defined impulsive semilinear functional differential equations with statedependent delay, Asian-Eur. J. Math. 1 (4) (2008), 449-468.
[2] S. Abbas, R.P. Agarwal and M. Benchohra, Darboux problem for impulsive partial hyperbolic differential equations of fractional order with variable times and infinite delay, Nonlinear Anal. Hybrid Syst. 4 (2010), 818-829.
[3] S. Abbas and M. Benchohra, Partial hyperbolic differential equations with finite delay involving the Caputo fractional derivative, Commun. Math. Anal. 7 (2) (2009), 62-72.
[4] S. Abbas and M. Benchohra, Darboux problem for perturbed partial differential equations of fractional order with finite delay, Nonlinear Anal.: Hybrid Syst. 3 (2009), 597-604.
[5] R.P Agarwal, M. Benchohra and S. Hamani, A survey on existence result for boundary value problems of nonlinear fractional differential equations and inclusions, Acta. Appl. Math. 109 (3) (2010), 973-1033.
[6] S. Abbas, M. Benchohra and L. Gorniewicz, Existence theory for impulsive partial hyperbolic functional differential equations involving the Caputo fractional derivative, Sci. Math. Jpn.. online e- 2010, 271-282.
[7] S. Abbas, M. Benchohra and G.M. N'Guérékata, Topics in Fractional Differential Equations, Developments in Mathematics, 27, Springer, New York, 2012.
[8] S. Abbas, M. Benchohra and A. N. Vityuk, On fractional order derivatives and Darboux problem for implicit differential equations. Frac. Calc. Appl. Anal. (to appear)).
[9] E. Ait Dads, M. Benchohra and S. Hamani, Impulsive fractional differential inclusions involving the Caputo fractional derivative, Fract. Calc. Appl. Anal. 12 (1) (2009), 15-38.
[10] E. Ait Dads and K. Ezzinbi, Boundedness and almost periodicity for some statedependent delay differential equations, Electron. J. Differential Equations 2002 No. 67 (2002), pp. 1-13.
[11] A. Anguraj, M. M. Arjunan and E. M. Hernàndez, Existence results for an impulsive neutral functional differential equation with state-dependent delay, Appl. Anal. 86 (7) (2007), 861-872.
[12] O. Arino, K. Boushaba and A. Boussouar, A mathematical model of the dynamics of the phytoplankton-nutrient system. Spatial heterogeneity in ecological models (Alcal de Henares, 1998). Nonlinear Anal. RWA 1 (1) (2000), 69-87.
[13] D. Baleanu, K. Diethelm, E. Scalas, J.J. Trujillo, Fractional Calculus Models and Numerical Methods, World Scientific Publishing, New York, 2012.
[14] A. Belarbi, M. Benchohra and A. Ouahab, Uniqueness results for fractional functional differential equations with infinite delay in Fréchet spaces, Appl. Anal. 85 (2006), 1459-1470.
[15] M. Benchohra, J. R. Graef and S. Hamani, Existence results for boundary value problems of nonlinear fractional differential equations with integral conditions, Appl. Anal. 87 (7) (2008), 851-863.
[16] M. Benchohra, S. Hamani and S.K. Ntouyas, Boundary value problems for differential equations with fractional order, Surv. Math. Appl. 3 (2008), 1-12.
[17] M. Benchohra and B. A. Slimani, Existence and uniqueness of solutions to impulsive fractional differential equations, Electron. J. Differential Equations 2009 (2009), No. $10,11 \mathrm{pp}$.
[18] M. Benchohra, J. Henderson, S.K. Ntouyas and A. Ouahab, Existence results for functional differential equations of fractional order, J. Math. Anal. Appl. 338 (2008), 1340-1350.
[19] M. Benchohra and D. Seba, Impulsive fractional differential equations in Banach spaces, Electron. J. Qual. Theory Differ. Equ. 2009, Special Edition I, No. 8, 14 pp. Spec. Ed. I, 2009 No. 8, 1-14.
[20] M. Benchohra and B. A. Slimani, Existence and uniqueness of solutions to impulsive fractional differential equations, Electron. J. Differential Equations, Vol. 2009 (2009), No. 10, 11 pp.
[21] M. Benchohra and Z. Boutefal, Impulsive Differential Equations of Fractional Order with Infinit Delay, Journal of Fractional Calculus and Applications 5(5), (2013), No. $1,15 \mathrm{pp}$.
[22] M. Benchohra and Z. Boutefal, Impulsive Hyperbolic System of Partial Differential Equation of Fractional Order with Delay, Commentationes Mathematica.
[23] M. Benchohra and Z. Boutefal, Impulsive Partial Hyperbolic Differential Equations of Fractional Order with State Dependent Delay, (submitted).
[24] M. Benchohra and Z. Boutefal, Global Uniqueness Results for Impulsive Fractional Partial Hyperbolic Differential Equations with Delay,(submitted).
[25] T. A. Burton and C. Kirk, A fixed point theorem of Krasnoselskii-Schaefer type, Math. Nachr. 189 (1998), 23-31.
[26] T. Czlapinski, On the Darboux problem for partial differential-functional equations with infinite delay at derivatives. Nonlinear Anal. 44 (2001), 389-398.
[27] T. Czlapinski, Existence of solutions of the Darboux problem for partial differentialfunctional equations with infinite delay in a Banach space. Comment. Math. Prace Mat. 35 (1995), 111-122.
[28] M.A. Darwish, and S.K. Ntouyas, Semilinear functional differential equations of fractional order with state-dependent delay. Electron. J. Differential Equations 2009, No. 38 (2009), pp. 1-10.
[29] M. Frigon and A. Granas, Résultats de type Leray-Schauder pour des contractions sur des espaces de Fréchet, Ann. Sci. Math. Québec, 22 (2) (1998), 161-168.
[30] A. Granas and J. Dugundji, Fixed Point Theory, Springer-Verlag, New York, 2003.
[31] I. Gyori and F. Hartung, Exponential stability of a state-dependent delay system. Discrete Contin. Dyn. Syst. 18 (4) (2007), 773-791.
[32] J. Hale and J. Kato, Phase space for retarded equationswith infinite delay, Funkcial. Ekvac. 21, (1978), 11-41.
[33] J. K. Hale and S. Verduyn Lunel, Introduction to Functional -Differential Equations, Applied Mathematical Sciences, 99, Springer-Verlag, New York, 1993.
[34] F. Hartung, Linearized stability for a class of neutral functional differential equations with state-dependent delays. Nonlinear Anal. 69 (5-6) (2008), 1629-1643.
[35] F. Hartung, Differentiability of solutions with respect to parameters in neutral differential equations with state-dependent delays. J. Math. Anal. Appl. 324 (1) (2006), 504-524.
[36] F. Hartung, Linearized stability in periodic functional differential equations with state-dependent delays. J. Comput. Appl. Math. 174 (2) (2005), 201-211.
[37] D. Henry, Geometric Theory of Semilinear Parabolic Partial Differential Equations, Springer-Verlag, Berlin-New York, 1989.
[38] E. Hernández, A. Prokopczyk and L. Ladeira, A note on partial functional differential equations with state-dependent delay. Nonlinear Anal. Real World Applications $\mathbf{7}$ (2006), 510-519.
[39] E. Hernandez, R. Sakthivel and S. Tanaka Aki, Existence results for impulsive evolution differential equations with state-dependent delay, Electron. J. Differential Equations, 2008 No. 28 (2008), pp. 1-11.
[40] R. Hilfer, Applications of Fractional Calculus in Physics, World Scientific, Singapore, 2000.
[41] Y. Hino, S. Murakami and T. Naito, Functional Differential Equations with Infinite Delay, in: Lecture Notes in Mathematics, 1473, Springer-Verlag, Berlin, 1991.
[42] A. A. Kilbas and S. A. Marzan, Nonlinear differential equations with the Caputo fractional derivative in the space of continuously differentiable functions, Differential Equations 41 (2005), 84-89.
[43] A.A. Kilbas, Hari M. Srivastava, and Juan J. Trujillo, Theory and Applications of Fractional Differential Equations. North-Holland Mathematics Studies, 204. Elsevier Science B.V., Amsterdam, 2006.
[44] V. Lakshmikantham, D. D. Bainov and P. S. Simeonov, Theory of Impulsive Differential Equations, World Scientific, Singapore, 1989.
[45] V. Lakshmikantham, S. Leela and J. Vasundhara, Theory of Fractional Dynamic Systems, Cambridge Academic Publishers, Cambridge, 2009.
[46] V. Lakshmikantham, L. Wen and B. Zhang, Theory of Differential Equations with Unbounded Delay, Mathematics and its Applications, Kluwer Academic Publishers, Dordrecht, 1994.
[47] K. S. Miller and B. Ross, An Introduction to the Fractional Calculus and Differential Equations, John Wiley, New York, 1993.
[48] K.B. Oldham and J. Spanier, The Fractional Calculus, Academic Press, New York, London, 1974.
[49] I. Podlubny, Fractional Differential Equations, Academic Press, San Diego, 1999.
[50] A.V. Rezounenko and J. Wu, A non-local PDE model for population dynamics with state-selective delay: Local theory and global attractors, J. Comput. Appl. Math. 190 (1-2) (2006), 99-113.
[51] A. M. Samoilenko and N. A. Perestyuk, Impulsive Differential Equations, World Scientific, Singapore, 1995.
[52] S. G. Samko, A. A. Kilbas and O. I. Marichev, Fractional Integrals and Derivatives. Theory and Applications, Gordon and Breach, Yverdon, 1993.
[53] V. E. Tarasov, Fractional Dynamics: Application of Fractional Calculus to Dynamics of Particles, Fields and Media, Springer, Heidelberg; Higher Education Press, Beijing, 2010.
[54] A. N. Vityuk, Existence of solutions of partial differential inclusions of fractional order, Izv. Vyssh. Uchebn., Ser. Mat., 8 (1997), 13-19.
[55] A. N. Vityuk and A. V. Golushkov, Existence of solutions of systems of partial differential equations of fractional order, Nonlinear Oscil. 7 (3) (2004), 318-325.
[56] A. N. Vityuk and A. V. Mykhailenko, On a class of fractional-order differential equation, Nonlinear Oscil. 11 (3), (2008), 307-319.
[57] A. N. Vityuk and A. V. Mykhailenko, The Darboux problem for an implicit fractionalorder differential equation, J. Math. Sci. 175 (4) (2011), 391-401.
[58] D.R. Willé and C.T.H. Baker, Stepsize control and continuity consistency for statedependent delay-differential equations, J. Comput. Appl. Math. 53 (2) (1994), 163170.

